



# Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

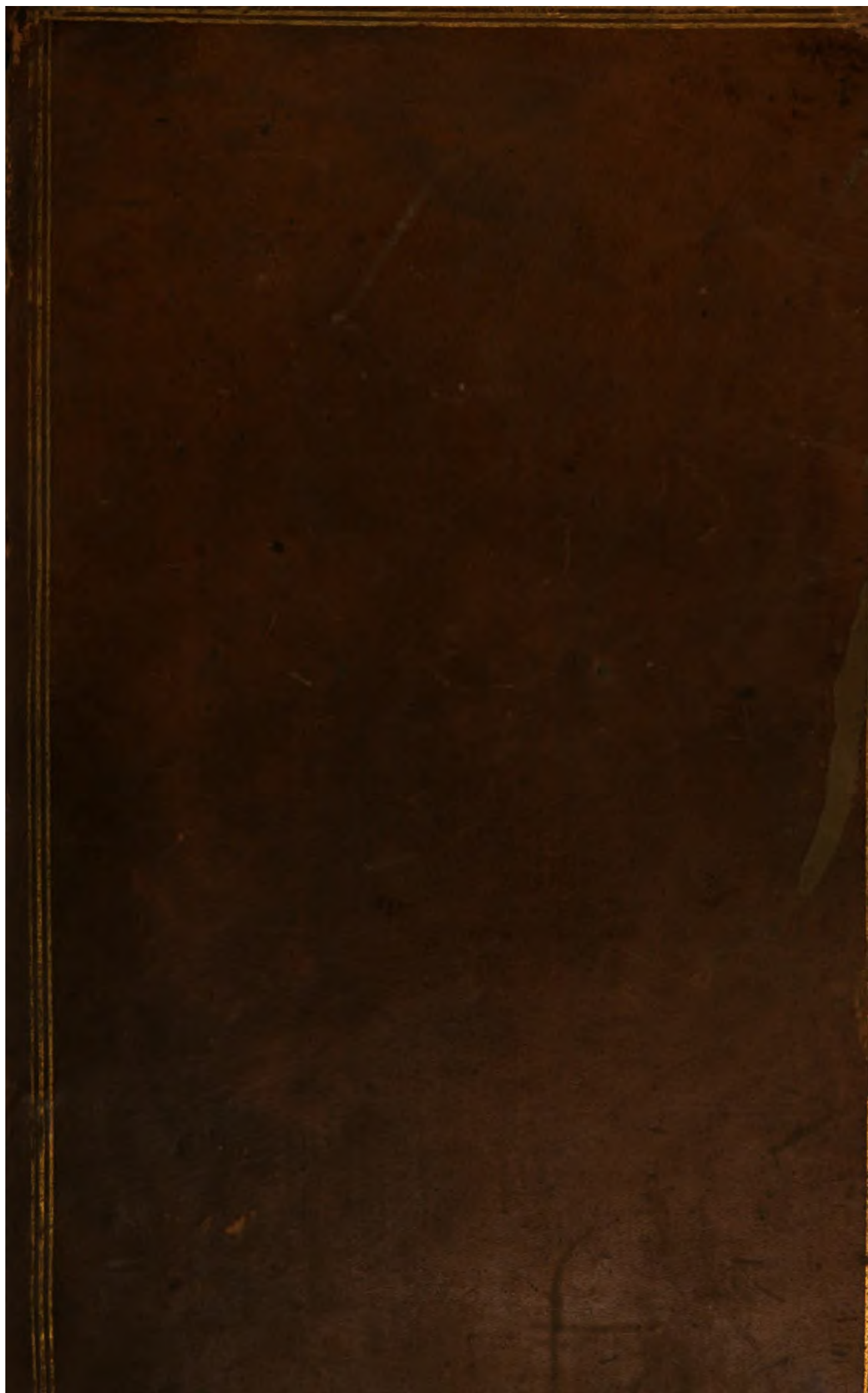
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

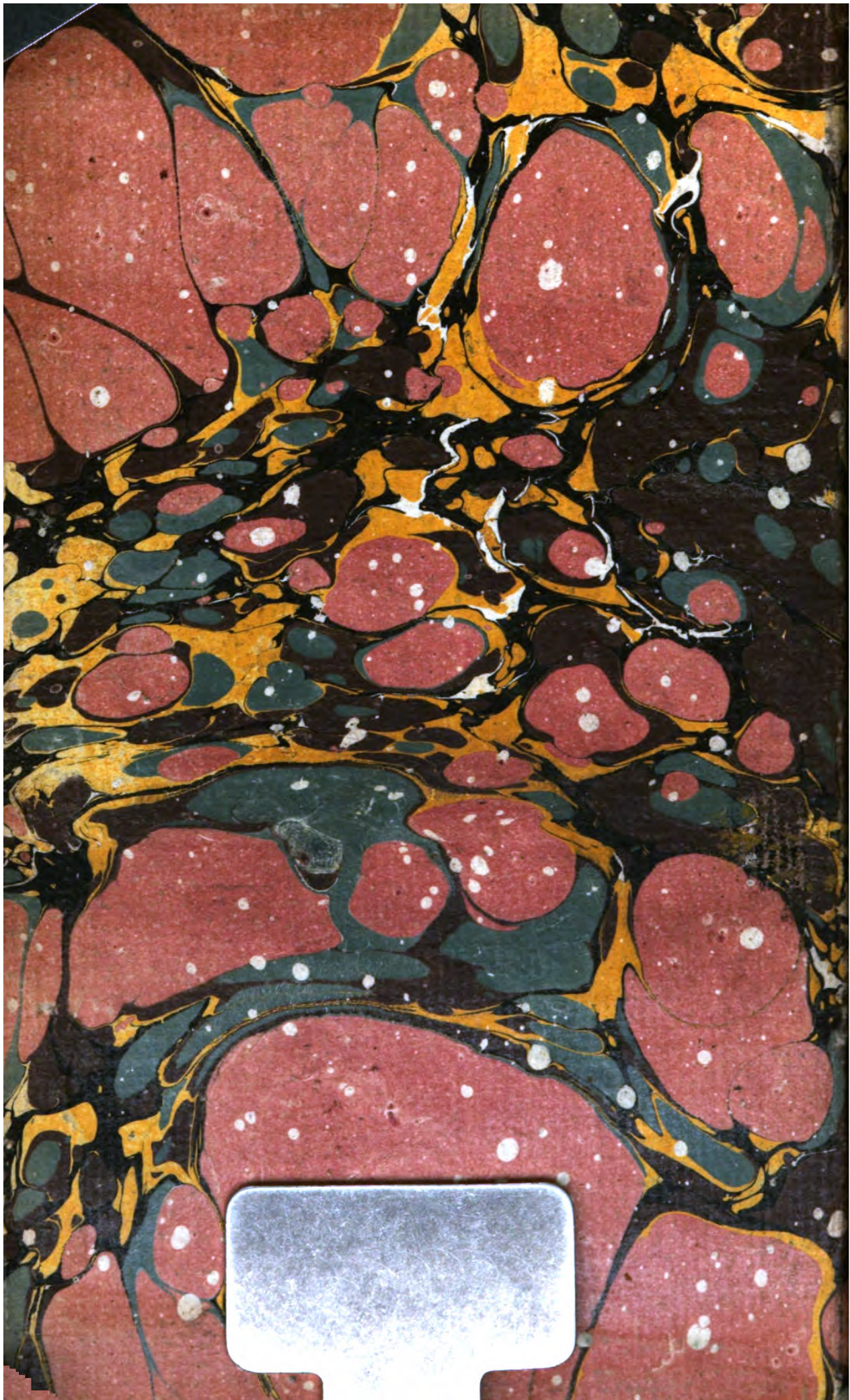
<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.













✓ Bl. from Brown      *posit*

174<sup>2</sup>

*256* ~~174~~

*256*

**G. B. Thornton**  
**HILL.**

256 f. 2872

*256*







W Bt. from Brown *posit*

17<sup>4</sup> *w*

*posit* 16

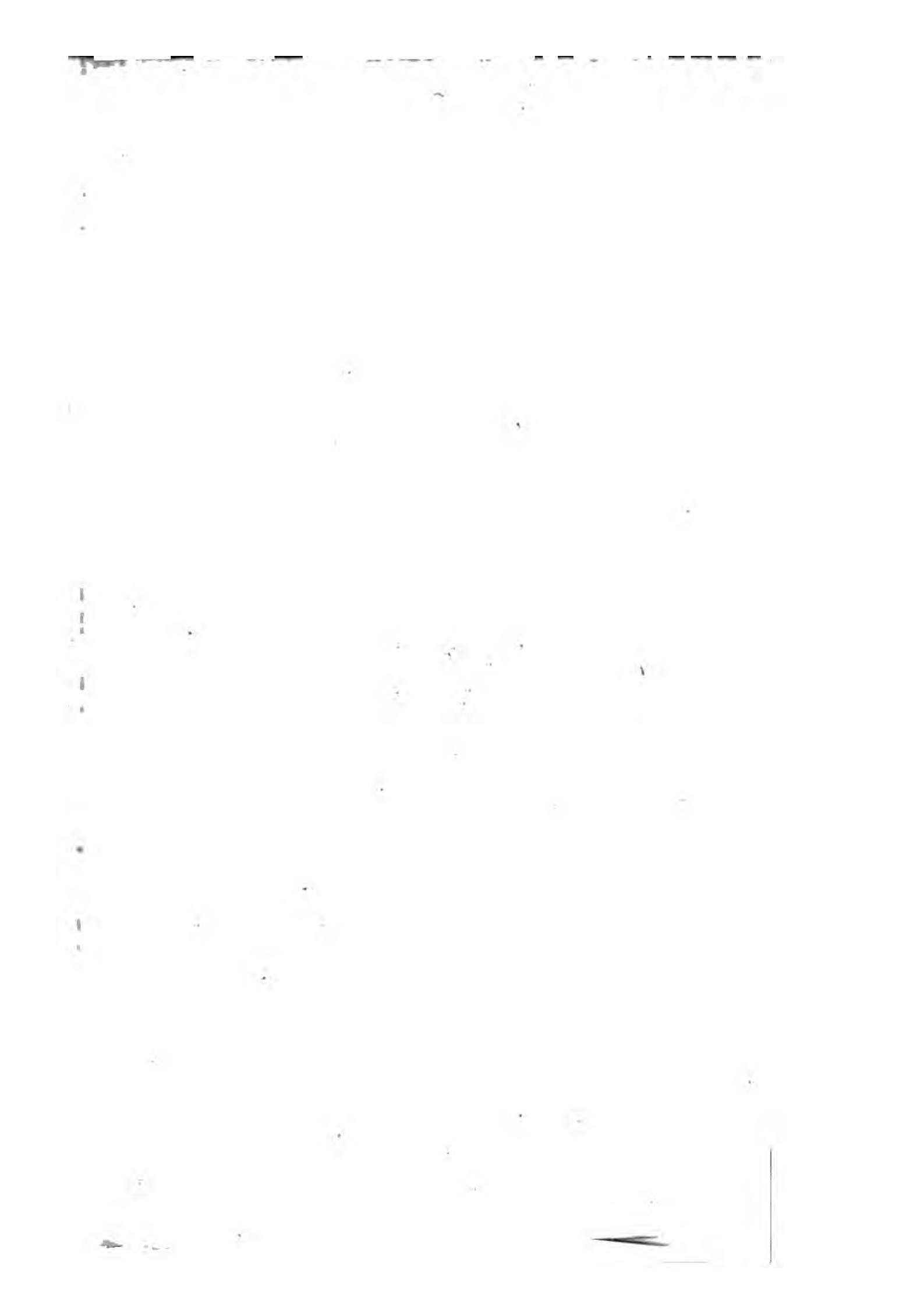
*ref* *seals*

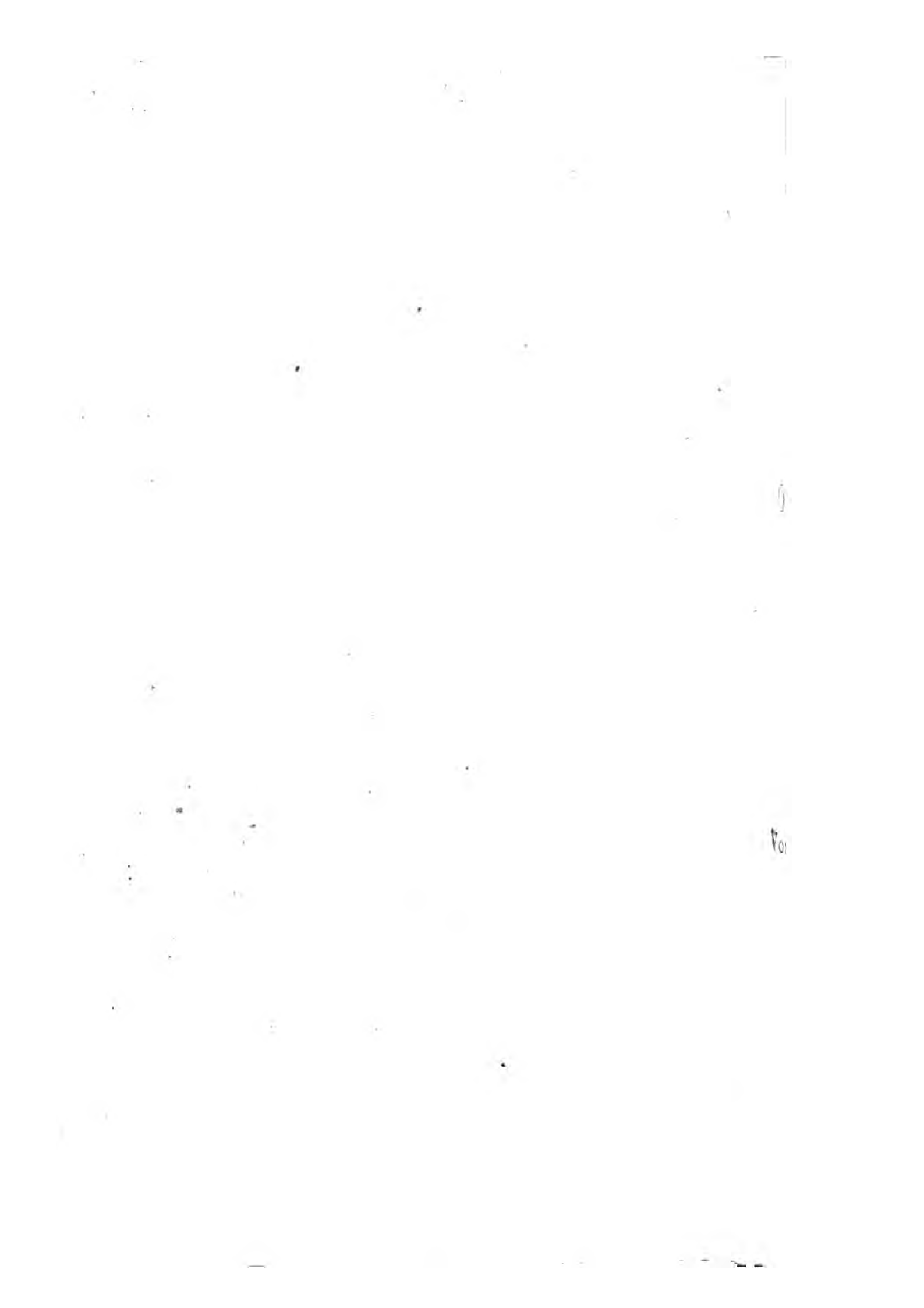
**G. B. Thornton**  
**HILL.**

256 f. 2872

*17*





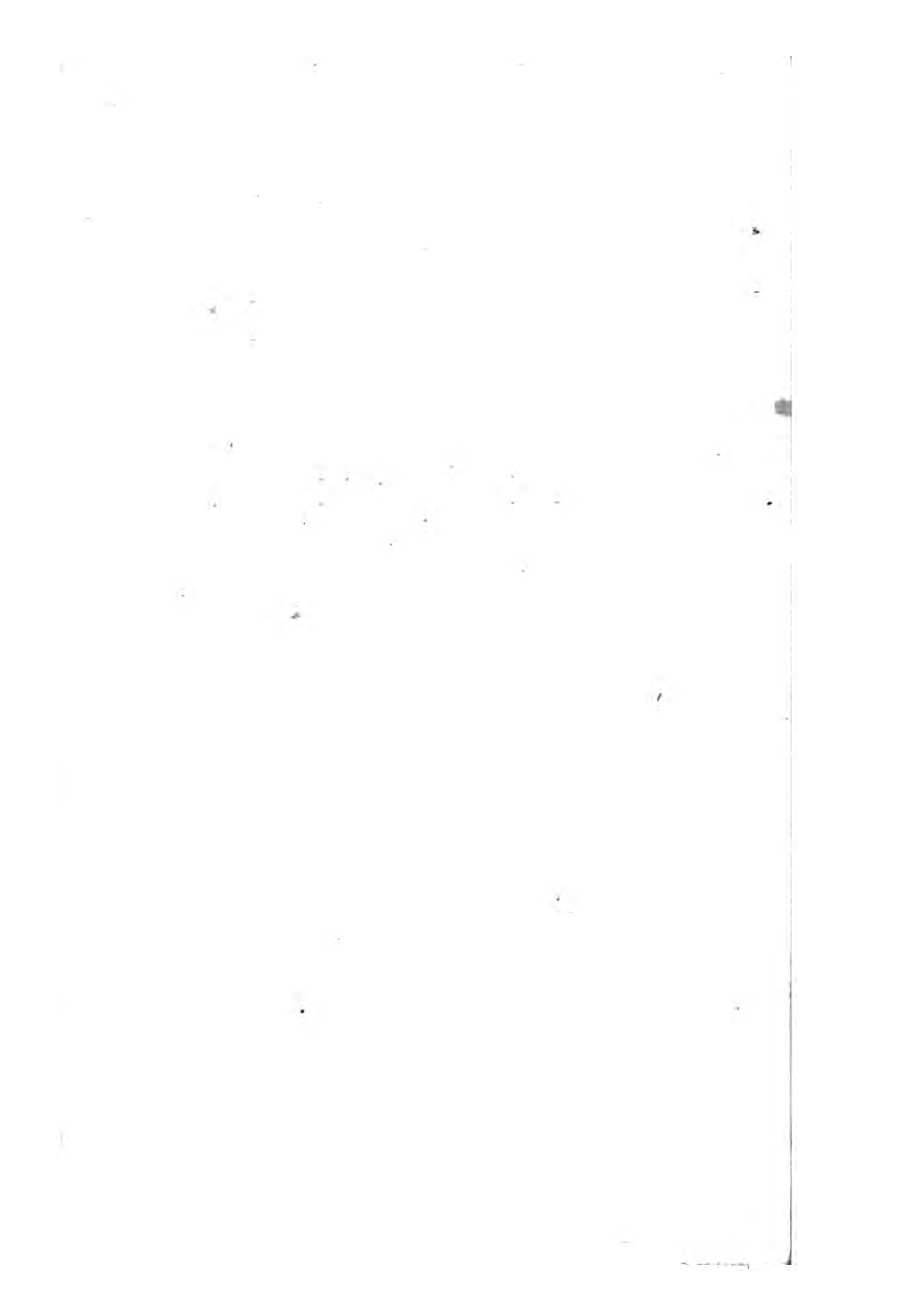




JOSEPH ANDREWS.

VOL. I.

A





T H E  
H I S T O R Y  
O F T H E  
A D V E N T U R E S  
O F  
J O S E P H A N D R E W S,

And his Friend

Mr A B R A H A M A D A M S.  
I N T W O V O L U M E S.

Written in Imitation of  
The Manner of CERVANTES, Author of  
DON QUIXOTE.

By HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

VOLUME the FIRST.

L O N D O N :  
Printed for B. LONG, and T. PRIDDEN.  
M. DCC. LXXIII.

Faint, illegible text, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. The text is arranged in several paragraphs, but the characters are too light and blurry to be transcribed accurately.





## P R E F A C E.

**A**S it is possible the mere English reader may have a different idea of romance from the author of these little volumes \*; and may consequently expect a kind of entertainment not to be found, nor which was even intended, in the following pages; it may not be improper to premise a few words concerning this kind of writing, which I do not remember to have seen hitherto attempted in our language.

The EPIC, as well as the DRAMA, is divided into Tragedy and Comedy. HOMER, who was the father of this species of poetry, gave us a pattern of both these, though that of the latter kind is entirely lost; which Aristotle tells us, bore the same relation to Comedy which his Iliad bears to Tragedy. And perhaps, that we have no more instances of it among the writers of antiquity, is owing to the loss of this great pattern, which, had it survived, would have found its imitators equally with the other poems of this great original.

And farther, as this poetry may be Tragic or Comic, I will not scruple to say it may be

\* Joseph Andrews was originally published in two volumes 12mo.

likewise either in verse or prose: for though it wants one particular, which the critic enumerates in the constituent parts of an epic poem, namely metre; yet, when any kind of writing contains all its other parts, such as fable, action, characters, sentiments, and diction, and is deficient in metre only; it seems, I think, reasonable to refer it to the epic; at least, as no critic hath thought proper to range it under any other head, or to assign it a particular name to itself.

Thus the *Telemachus* of the Archbishop of Cambray appears to me of the epic kind, as well as the *Odysey* of Homer; indeed, it is much fairer and more reasonable to give it a name common with that species from which it differs only in a single instance, than to confound it with those which it resembles in no other. Such are those voluminous works, commonly called Romances, namely, *Clelia*, *Cleopatra*, *Astræa*, *Cassandra*, the *Grand Cyrus*, and innumerable others, which contain, as I apprehend, very little instruction or entertainment.

Now a comic romance is a comic epic-poem in prose; differing from comedy, as the serious epic from tragedy: its action being more extended and comprehensive; containing a much larger circle of incidents, and introducing a greater variety of characters. It differs from

---

P R E F A C E.      vii

the serious romance in its fable and action, in this; that as in the one these are grave and solemn, so in the other they are light and ridiculous: it differs in its characters, by introducing persons of inferior rank, and consequently of inferior manners, whereas the grave romance sets the highest before us; lastly, in its sentiments and diction, by preserving the ludicrous instead of the sublime. In the diction, I think, burlesque itself may be sometimes admitted; of which many instances will occur in this work, as in the description of the battles, and some other places, not necessary to be pointed out to the classical readers; for whose entertainment those parodies or burlesque imitations are chiefly calculated.

But though we have sometimes admitted this in our diction, we have carefully excluded it from our sentiments and characters: for there it is never properly introduced, unless in writings of the burlesque kind, which this is not intended to be. Indeed, no two species of writing can differ more widely than the comic and the burlesque; for as the latter is ever the exhibition of what is monstrous and unnatural, and where our delight, if we examine it, arises from the surprising absurdity, as in appropriating the manners of the highest to the lowest, or *e converso*; so in the former we should ever confine ourselves strictly to na-

ture, from the just imitation of which will flow all the pleasure we can this way convey to a sensible reader. And perhaps there is one reason why a comic writer should of all others be the least excused for deviating from nature, since it may not be always so easy for a serious poet to meet with the great and the admirable ; but life every where furnishes an accurate observer with the ridiculous.

I have hinted this little concerning burlesque ; because I have often heard that name given to performances, which have been truly of the comic kind, from the author's having sometimes admitted it in his diction only ; which, as it is the dress of poetry, doth, like the dress of men, establish characters, (the one of the whole poem, and the other of the whole man) in vulgar opinion, beyond any of their greater excellencies : but surely, a certain drollery in stile, where the characters and sentiments are perfectly natural, no more constitutes the burlesque, than an empty pomp and dignity of words, where every thing else is mean and low, can entitle any performance to the appellation of the true sublime.

And I apprehend, my Lord Shaftesbury's opinion of mere burlesque agrees with mine, when he asserts, there is no such thing to be found in the writings of the ancients. But perhaps I have less abhorrence than he pro-



fesses for it : and that not because I have had some little success on the stage this way ; but rather, as it contributes more to exquisite mirth and laughter than any other ; and these are probably more wholesome physic for the mind, and conduce better to purge away spleen, melancholy, and ill affections, than is generally imagined. Nay, I will appeal to common observation, whether the same companies are not found more full of good humour and beneyolence, after they have been sweetened for two or three hours with entertainments of this kind, than when soured by a tragedy or a grave lecture.

But to illustrate all this by another science, in which, perhaps, we shall see the distinction more clearly and plainly : let us examine the works of a comic history-painter, with those performances which the Italians call *Caricatura* ; where we shall find the true excellence of the former to consist in the exactest copying of nature ; insomuch that a judicious eye instantly rejects any thing *outré* ; any liberty which the painter hath taken with the features of that *alma mater*. — Whereas in the *Caricatura* we allow all licence. Its aim is to exhibit monsters, not men ; and all distortions and exaggerations whatever are within its proper province.

Now what *Caricatura* is in painting, Bur-

lesque is in writing; and in the same manner the comic writer and painter correlate to each other. And here I shall observe, that, as in the former the painter seems to have the advantage, so it is in the latter infinitely on the side of the writer: for the Monstrous is much easier to paint than describe, and the Ridiculous to describe than paint.

And tho' perhaps this latter species doth not in either science so strongly affect and agitate the muscles as the other: yet it will be owned, I believe, that a more rational and useful pleasure arises to us from it. He who should call the ingenious Hogarth a burlesque painter, would, in my opinion, do him very little honour: for sure it is much easier, much less the subject of admiration, to paint a man with a nose, or any other feature of a preposterous size, or to expose him in some absurd or monstrous attitude, than to express the affections of men on canvas. It hath been thought a vast commendation of a painter, to say his figures seem to breathe; but surely it is a much greater and nobler applause, that they appear to think.

But to return——The Ridiculous only, as I have before said, falls within my province in the present work.——Nor will some explanation of this word be thought impertinent by the reader, if he considers how wonderfully

It hath been mistaken, even by writers who have profess'd it: for to what but such a mistake, can we attribute the many attempts to ridicule the blackest villainies; and what is yet worse, the most dreadful calamities? What could exceed the absurdity of an author, who should write the comedy of Nero, with the merry incident of ripping up his mother's belly? or what would give a greater shock to humanity, than an attempt to expose the miseries of poverty and distress to ridicule? And yet, the reader will not want much learning to suggest such instances to himself.

Besides, it may seem remarkable, that Aristotle, who is so fond and free of definitions, hath not thought proper to define the Ridiculous. Indeed, where he tells it is proper to comedy, he hath remarked that villainy is not its object: but he hath not as I remember positively asserted what is. Nor doth the Abbe Bellegrade, who has written a treatise on this subject, tho' he shews us many species of it, once trace it to its fountain.

The only source of the true Ridiculous (as it appears to me) is affectation. But tho' it arises from one spring only; when we consider the infinite streams into which this one branches, we shall presently cease to admire at the copious field it affords to an observer. Now affectation proceeds from one of these

two causes; vanity or hypocrisy: for as vanity puts us on affecting false characters, in order to purchase applause; so hypocrisy sets us on an endeavour to avoid censure, by concealing our vices under an appearance of their opposite virtues. And tho' these two causes are often confounded, (for there is some difficulty in distinguishing them) yet as they proceed from very different motives, so they are as clearly distinct in their operations: for indeed, the affectation which arises from vanity is nearer to truth than the other; as it hath not that violent repugnancy of nature to struggle with, which that of the hypocrite hath. It may be likewise noted, that affectation doth not imply an absolute negation of those qualities which are affected: and therefore, tho' when it proceeds from hypocrisy, it be nearly allied to deceit; yet when it comes from vanity only, it partakes of the nature of ostentation. For instance, the affectation of liberality in a vain man, differs visibly from the same affectation in the avaricious: for though the vain man is not what he would appear, or hath not the virtue he affects, to the degree he would be thought to have it; yet it fits less awkwardly on him than on the avaricious man, who is the very reverse of what he would seem to be.

From the discovery of this affectation arises



the Ridiculous—which always strikes the reader with surprize and pleasure; and that in a higher and stronger degree when the affectation arises from hypocrisy, than when from vanity: for, to discover any one to be the exact reverse of what he affects, is more surprizing, and consequently more ridiculous, than to find him a little deficient in the quality he desires the reputation of. I might observe, that our Ben Johnson, who of all men understood the Ridiculous the best, hath chiefly used the hypocritical affectation.

Now from affectation only, the misfortunes and calamities of life, or the imperfections of nature, may become the objects of ridicule. Surely he hath a very ill-framed mind, who can look on ugliness, infirmity, or poverty, as ridiculous in themselves: nor do I believe any man living, who meets a dirty fellow riding through the streets in a cart, is struck with an idea of the Ridiculous from it; but if he should see the same figure descend from his coach and six, or bolt from his chair with his hat under his arm, he would then begin to laugh, and with justice. In the same manner, were we to enter a poor house, and behold a wretched family shivering with cold, and languishing with hunger, it would not incline us to laughter (at least we must have very diabolical natures, if it would:) but should we dis-

cover there a grate, instead of coals, adorned with flowers, empty plate or china dishes on the sideboard, or any other affectation of riches and finery either on their persons or in their furniture; we might then indeed be excused for ridiculing so fantastical an appearance. Much less are natural imperfections the objects of derision: but when ugliness aims at the applause of beauty, or lameness endeavours to display agility; it is then that these unfortunate circumstances, which at first moved our compassion, tend only to raise our mirth.

The poet carries this very far;

‘None are for being what they are in fault,  
 ‘But for not being what they would be thought.’

Where if the metre would suffer the word Ridiculous to close the first line, the thought would be rather more proper. Great vices are the proper objects of our detestation, smaller faults of our pity: but affectation appears to me the only true source of the Ridiculous.

But perhaps it may be objected to me, that I have against my own rules introduced vices, and of a very black kind, in this work: To which I shall answer: first, that it is very difficult to pursue a series of human actions, and keep clear from them. Secondly, that the

vices to be found here, are rather the accidental consequences of some human frailty or foible, than causes habitually existing in the mind. Thirdly, that they are never set forth as the objects of ridicule, but detestation. Fourthly, that they are never the principal figure at that time on the scene; and lastly, they never produce the intended evil.

Having thus distinguished Joseph Andrews from the productions of romance-writers on the one hand, and burlesque-writers on the other, and given some few very short hints (for I intended no more) of this species of writing, which I have affirmed to be hitherto unattempted in our language; I shall leave to my good-natured reader to apply my piece to my observations, and will detain him no longer than with a word concerning the characters in this work.

And here I solemnly protest, I have no intention to vilify or asperse any one: for tho' every thing is copied from the book of nature, and scarce a character or action produced which I have not taken from my own observations and experience; yet I have used the utmost care to obscure the persons by such different circumstances, degrees and colours, that it will be impossible to guess at them with any degree of certainty; and if it ever hap-

XIV P R E F A C E.

pens otherwise, it is only where the failure characterized is so minute, that it is a foible only, which the party himself may laugh at as well as any other.

As to the character of Adams, as it is the most glaring in the whole, so I conceive it is not to be found in any book now extant. It is designed a character of perfect simplicity; and as the goodness of his heart will recommend him to the good-natured, so I hope it will excuse me to the gentlemen of his cloth, for whom, while they are worthy of their sacred order, no man can possibly have a greater respect. They will therefore excuse me, notwithstanding the low adventures in which he is engaged, that I have made him a clergyman; since no other office could have given him so many opportunities of displaying his worthy inclinations.

C O N T E N T S

O F T H E

F I R S T V O L U M E .

B O O K F I R S T .

C H A P. I.

*O*f writing lives in general, and particularly of Pamela; with a word by the bye of Colley Cibber and others. Page 25

C H A P. II.

*O*f Mr Joseph Andrews his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments; with a word or two concerning ancestors. 28

C H A P. III.

*O*f Mr Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs Slipflop the chambermaid, and others. 32

C H A P. IV.

*W*hat happened after their journey to London. 39

C H A P. V.

*T*he death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his

B 3



xvi C O N T E N T S.

*widow, and the great purity of Joseph  
Andrews.* 42

C H A P. VI.

*How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his  
sister Pamela.* 46

C H A P. VII.

*Sayings of wise men. A dialogue between the  
Lady and her maid; and a panegyric, or  
rather satire, on the passion of love, in the  
sublime style.* 52

C H A P. VIII.

*On which, after some very fine writing, the  
history goes on, and relates an interview  
between the Lady and Joseph; where the  
latter hath set an example, which we de-  
spair of seeing followed by his sex, in this  
vicious age.* 58

C H A P. IX.

*What passed between the Lady and Mrs Slip-  
flop, in which we prophecy there are some  
strokes which every one will not truly com-  
prehend at the first reading.* 66

C H A P. X.

*Joseph writes another letter; His transac-  
tions with Mr Peter Pounce, &c. with  
his departure from Lady Booby.* 73

C H A P. XI.

*Of several new matters not expected.* 76

C O N T E N T S. xvii

C H A P. XII.

*Containing many surprising adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.* 81

C H A P. XIII.

*What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and Mr Barnabas the parson of the parish.* 92

C H A P. XIV.

*Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.* 98

C H A P. XV.

*Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little mortified: and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thief: with a dissertation accounting for their zeal, and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.* 107

C H A P. XVI.

*The escape of the thief. Mr Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of parson Adams to parson Barnabas.* 114

C H A P. XVII.

*A pleasant discourse between the two parsons*

xviii C O N T E N T S.

*and the Bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.* 129

C H A P. XVIII.

*The history of Betty the chambermaid, and an account of what occasioned the violent scene in the preceding chapter.* 138

BOOK SECOND.

C H A P. I.

*O*F divisions in authors. 144

C H A P. II.

*A surprizing instance of Mr Adams's short memory, with the unfortunate consequences which it brought on Joseph.* 148

C H A P. III.

*The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same gentleman, with Mr Adams's enquiry into the religion of his host.* 156

C H A P. IV.

*The history of Leonora: or, The unfortunate jilt.* 167

C H A P. V.

*A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams.* 195

C O N T E N T S.    xix

C H A P. VI.

*Conclusion of the unfortunate jilt.*    209

C H A P. VII.

*A very short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way.*    217

C H A P. VIII.

*A notable dissertation by Mr Abraham Adams; wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.*    221

C H A P. IX.

*In which the gentleman descants on bravery and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident puts an end to the discourse.*    227

C H A P. X.

*Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.*    235

C H A P. XI.

*What happened to them while before the Justice. A chapter very full of learning.* 243

C H A P. XII.

*A very delightful adventure, as well to the persons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.*    255

xx C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. XIII.

*A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Slipslop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.*  
262

C H A P. XIV.

*An interview between parson Adams and parson Trulliber.*  
272

C H A P. XV.

*An adventure, the consequence of a new instance which Parson Adams gave of his forgetfulness.*  
283

C H A P. XVI.

*A very curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart than of his experience in the ways of this world.*  
288

C H A P. XVII.

*A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and his host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers.*  
302

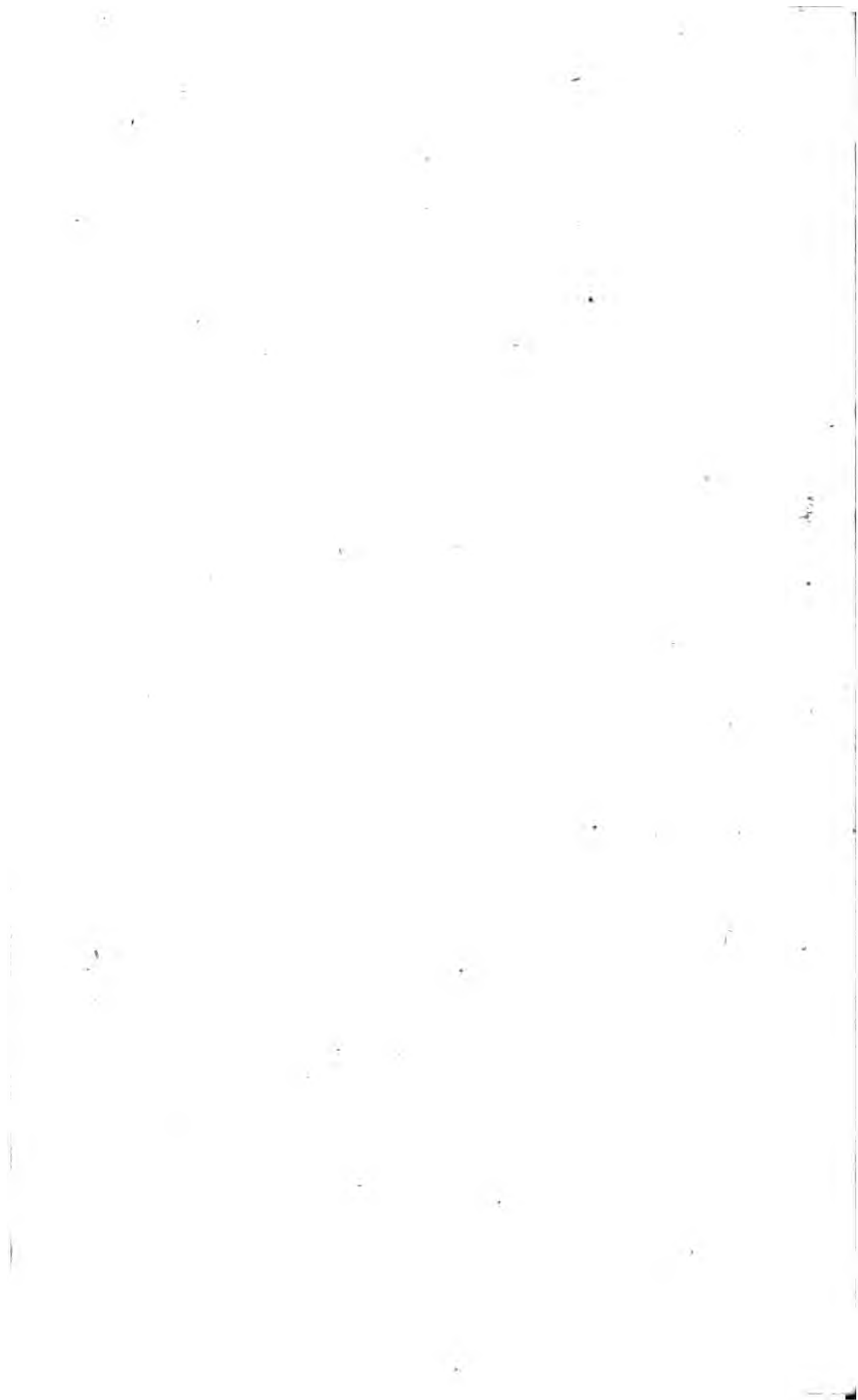


T H E  
H I S T O R Y  
O F T H E  
A D V E N T U R E S  
O F

JOSEPH ANDREWS, and his Friend  
Mr ABRAHAM ADAMS.

Written in Imitation of

The manner of CERVANTES, Author of  
DON QUIXOTE.



# R O O K F I R S T.

## C H A P. I.

*Of writing lives in general, and particularly of Pamela; with a word by the bye of Colley Cibber and others.*

**I**T is a trite but true observation, that examples work more forcibly on the mind than precepts: and if this be just in what is odious and blameable, it is more strongly so in what is amiable and praise-worthy. Here emulation most effectually operates upon us, and inspires our imitation in an irresistible manner. A good man therefore is a standing lesson to all his acquaintance, and of far greater use in that narrow circle than a good book.

But as it often happens that the best men are but little known, and consequently cannot extend the usefulness of their examples a great way; the writer may be called in aid to spread their history farther, and to present the amiable pictures to those who have not the happiness of knowing the originals; and so, by communicating such valuable patterns to the world, he may, perhaps, do a more extensive service to mankind, than the

person whose life originally afforded the pattern.

In this light I have always regarded those biographers who have recorded the actions of great and worthy persons of both sexes. Not to mention those ancient writers which of late days are little read, being written in obsolete, and, as they are generally thought, unintelligible languages, such as Plutarch, Nepos, and others which I heard of in my youth; our own language affords many of excellent use and instruction, finely calculated to sow the seeds of virtue in youth, and very easy to be comprehended by persons of moderate capacity. Such are the history of John the Great, who, by his brave and heroic actions against men of large and athletic bodies, obtained the glorious appellation of the Giant-killer; that of an Earl of Warwick, whose Christian name was Guy; the lives of Argalus and Parthenia; and, above all, the history of those seven worthy personages the Champions of Christendom. In all these, delight is mixed with instruction, and the reader is almost as much improved as entertained.

But I pass by these and many others, to mention two books lately published, which represent an admirable pattern of the amiable in either sex. The former of these,

---

which deals in male virtue, was written by the great person himself, who lived the life he hath recorded, and is by many thought to have lived such a life only in order to write it; the other, communicated to us by an historian who borrows his lights, as the common method is, from authentic papers and records. The reader, I believe, already conjectures I mean the lives of Mr Colley Cibber, and of Mrs Pamela Andrews. How artfully doth the former, by insinuating that he escaped being promoted to the highest stations in church and state, teach us a contempt of worldly grandeur! how strongly doth he inculcate an absolute submission to our superiors! Lastly, how completely doth he arm us against so uneasy, so wretched a passion as the fear of shame! how clearly doth he expose the emptiness and vanity of that phantom, reputation!

What the female readers are taught by the memoirs of Mrs Andrews, is so well set forth in the excellent essays or letters prefixed to the second and subsequent editions of that work, that it would be here a needless repetition. The authentic history with which I now present the public, is an instance of the great good that book is likely to do, and of the prevalence of example which I have just observed: since it will ap-



pear that it was by keeping the excellent pattern of his sister's virtues before his eyes, that Mr Joseph Andrews was chiefly enabled to preserve his purity in the midst of such great temptations. I shall only add, that this character of male chastity, though doubtless as desirable and becoming in one part of the human species as in the other, is almost the only virtue which the great apologist hath not given himself for the sake of giving the example to his readers.

## C H A P. II.

*Of Mr Joseph Andrews his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments; with a word or two concerning ancestors.*

MR Joseph Andrews, the hero of our ensuing history, was esteemed to be the only son of Gaffer and Gammer Andrews, and brother to the illustrious Pamela, whose virtue is at present so famous. As to his ancestors, we have searched with great diligence, but little success; being unable to trace them farther than his great-grandfather, who, as an elderly person in the parish remembers to have heard his father say, was an excellent cudgel-player. Whether he had any ancestors before this, we must leave to the opinion of our curious reader, finding

## JOSEPH ANDREWS. 29

nothing of sufficient certainty to rely on. However, we cannot omit inserting an epitaph which an ingenious friend of ours hath communicated :

Stay, traveller, for underneath this pew  
Lyes fast asleep that merry man Andrew.  
When the last day's great sun shall gild the skies,  
Then he shall from his tomb get up and rise.  
Be merry while thou can'st: for surely thou  
Shall shortly be as sad as he is now.

The words are almost out of the stone with antiquity. But it is needless to observe, that Andrew here is writ without an *s*, and is, besides, a Christian name. My friend moreover conjectures this to have been the founder of that sect of laughing philosophers, since called Merry Andrews.

To wave therefore a circumstance, which, though mentioned in conformity to the exact rules of biography, is not greatly material; I proceed to things of more consequence. Indeed, it is sufficiently certain, that he had as many ancestors as the best man living; and perhaps, if we look five or six hundred years backwards, might be related to some persons of very great figure at present, whose ancestors within half the last century are buried in as great obscurity. But suppose, for argument's sake, we should admit that

### 30 THE ADVENTURES OF

he had no ancestors at all, but had sprung up, according to the modern phrase, out of a dunghill, as the Athenians pretended they themselves did from the earth, would not this Autokopros \* have been justly entitled to all the praise arising from his own virtues? Would it not be hard, that a man who hath no ancestors, should therefore be rendered incapable of acquiring honour, when we see so many who have no virtues, enjoying the honour of their forefathers? At ten years old (by which time his education was advanced to writing and reading) he was bound an apprentice, according to the statute, to Sir Thomas Booby, an uncle of Mr Booby's by the father's side. Sir Thomas having then an estate in his own hands, the young Andrews was at first employed in what in the country they call keeping birds. His office was to perform the part the ancients assigned to the god Priapus, which deity the moderns call by the name of Jack-o'Lent: but his voice being so extremely musical, that it rather allured the birds than terrified them, he was soon transplanted from the fields into the dog-kennel, where he was placed under the huntsman, and made what sportsmen term

\* In English, sprung from a dunghill.

Whipper-in. But this place likewise the sweetness of his voice disqualified him; the dogs preferring the melody of his chiding to all the alluring notes of the huntsman, who soon became so incensed at it, that he desired Sir Thomas to provide otherwise for him; and constantly laid every fault the dogs were at, to the account of the poor boy, who was now transplanted to the stable. Here he soon gave proofs of his strength and agility, beyond his years, and constantly rode the most spirited and vicious horses to water, with an intrepidity that surprized every one. While he was in this station, he rode several races for Sir Thomas, and this with such expertness and success, that the neighbouring gentlemen frequently solicited the knight, to permit little Joey (for so he was called) to ride their matches. The best gamesters, before they laid their money, always inquired which horse little Joey was to ride; and the bets were rather proportioned by the rider than by the horse himself; especially after he had scornfully refused a considerable bribe to play booty on such an occasion. This extremely raised his character, and so pleased the Lady Booby, that she desired to have him (being now seventeen years of age) for her own foot-boy.

Joey was now preferred from the stable

32 THE ADVENTURES OF

to attend on his lady, to go on her errands, stand behind her chair, wait at her tea-table, and carry her prayer-book to church; at which place, his voice gave him an opportunity of distinguishing himself by singing psalms; he behaved likewise in every other respect so well at divine service, that it recommended him to the notice of Mr Abraham Adams the curate, who took an opportunity one day, as he was drinking a cup of ale in Sir Thomas's kitchen, to ask the young man several questions concerning religion; with his answers to which he was wonderfully pleased.

C H A P. III.

*Of Mr Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs Slipflop the chambermaid, and others.*

**M**R Abraham Adams was an excellent scholar. He was a perfect master of the Greek and Latin languages; to which he added a great share of knowledge in the Oriental tongues, and could read and translate French, Italian, and Spanish. He had applied many years to the most severe study, and had treasured up a fund of learning rarely to be met with in a university. He was besides a man of good sense, good parts, and good nature; but was at the same time



as entirely ignorant of the ways of this world, as an infant just entered into it could possibly be. As he had never any intention to deceive, so he never suspected such a design in others. He was generous, friendly, and brave to an excess; but simplicity was his characteristic: he did, no more than Mr Colley Cibber, apprehend any such passions as malice and envy to exist in mankind; which was indeed less remarkable in a country parson, than in a gentleman who hath past his life behind the scenes, a place which hath been seldom thought the school of innocence; and where a very little observation would have convinced the great apologist, that those passions have a real existence in the human mind.

His virtue, and his other qualifications, as they rendered him equal to his office; so they made him an agreeable and valuable companion, and had so much endeared and well recommended him to a bishop, that, at the age of fifty, he was provided with a handsome income of twenty-three pounds a-year: which, however, he could not make any great figure with; because he lived in a dear country, and was a little incumbered with a wife and six children.

It was this gentleman, who having, as I have said, observed the singular devotion of

### 34 THE ADVENTURES OF

young Andrews, had found means to question him concerning several particulars; as how many books were there in the New Testament? which were they? how many chapters they contained? and such like; to all which, Mr Adams privately said, he answered much better than Sir Thomas, or two other neighbouring justices of the peace could probably have done.

Mr Adams was wonderfully solicitous to know at what time, and by what opportunity the youth became acquainted with these matters: Joey told him, that he had very early learnt to read and write by the goodness of his father, who, though he had not interest enough to get him into a charity-school, because a cousin of his father's landlord did not vote on the right side for a church-warden in a borough-town, yet had been himself at the expence of sixpence a week for his learning. He told him likewise, that ever since he was in Sir Thomas's family, he had employed all his hours of leisure in reading good books; that he had read the Bible, the Whole Duty of Man, and Thomas a Kempis; and that, as often as he could, without being perceived, he had studied a great good book which lay open in the hall-window, where he had read, 'as how the devil carried away half a church in sermon.'

‘ time, without hurting one of the congrega-  
 ‘ tion; and as how a field of corn ran away  
 ‘ down a hill with all the trees upon it, and  
 ‘ covered another man’s meadow.’ This  
 sufficiently assured Mr Adams, that the good  
 book meant could be no other than Baker’s  
 Chronicle.

The curate, surpris’d to find such instances  
 of industry and application in a young man,  
 who had never met with the least encourage-  
 ment, asked him, if he did not extremely re-  
 gret the want of a liberal education, and the  
 not having been born of parents who might  
 have indulg’d his talents and desire of know-  
 ledge? To which he answer’d, ‘ He hop’d  
 ‘ he had profited somewhat better from the  
 ‘ books he had read, than to lament his con-  
 ‘ dition in this world. That, for his part,  
 ‘ he was perfectly content with the state to  
 ‘ which he was call’d; that he should en-  
 ‘ deavour to improve his talent, which was  
 ‘ all required of him, but not repine at his  
 ‘ own lot, nor envy those of his betters,’  
 ‘ Well said, my lad,’ replied the curate, ‘ and  
 ‘ I wish some who have read many more  
 ‘ good books, nay, and some who have writ-  
 ‘ ten good books themselves, had profited so  
 ‘ much by them.’

Adams had no nearer access to Sir Tho-  
 mas or my lady, than through the waiting-

gentlewoman : for Sir Thomas was too apt to estimate men merely by their dress or fortune ; and my lady was a woman of gaiety, who had been blessed with a town education, and never spoke of any of her country neighbours by any other appellation than that of the Brutes. They both regarded the curate as a kind of domestic only, belonging to the parson of the parish, who was at this time at variance with the knight ; for the parson had for many years lived in a constant state of civil war, or, which is perhaps as bad, of civil law, with Sir Thomas himself and the tenants of his manor. The foundation of this quarrel was a *modus*, by setting which aside, an advantage of several shillings *per annum* would have accrued to the rector : but he had not yet been able to accomplish his purpose ; and had reaped hitherto nothing better from the suits than the pleasure (which he used indeed frequently to say was no small one) of reflecting that he had utterly undone many of the poor tenants, though he had at the same time greatly impoverished himself.

Mrs Slipflop the waiting gentlewoman, being herself the daughter of a curate, preserved some respect for Adams ; she professed great regard for his learning, and would frequently dispute with him on points of theology : but always insisted on a deference



to be paid to her understanding, as she had been frequently at London, and knew more of the world than a country parson could pretend to.

She had in these disputes a particular advantage over Adams; for she was a mighty affecter of hard words, which she used in such a manner, that the parson, who durst not offend her by calling her words in question, was frequently at some loss to guess her meaning, and would have been much less puzzled by an Arabian manuscript.

Adams therefore took an opportunity one day, after a pretty long discourse with her on the essence (or, as she pleased to term it, the incence) of matter, to mention the case of young Andrews; desiring her to recommend him to her lady as a youth very susceptible of learning, and one whose instruction in Latin he would himself undertake; by which means he might be qualified for a higher station than that of a footman: and added, she knew it was in his master's power easily to provide for him in a better manner. He therefore desired, that the boy might be left behind under his care.

‘La, Mr Adams,’ said Mrs Slipflop, ‘do you think my lady will suffer any preambles about any such matter? She is going to London very concisely, and I am confidous

‘ would not leave Joey behind her on any  
‘ account; for he is one of the genteelst  
‘ young fellows you may see in a summer’s  
‘ day, and I am confidous she would as soon  
‘ think of parting with a pair of her grey  
‘ mares; for she values herself as much on  
‘ the one as the other.’ Adams would have  
interrupted, but she proceeded: ‘ And why  
‘ is Latin more necessitous for a footman than  
‘ a gentleman? It is very proper that you  
‘ clergymen must learn it, because you can’t  
‘ preach without it: but I have heard great  
‘ gentlemen say in London, that it is fit for  
‘ no body else. I am confidous my lady  
‘ would be angry with me for mentioning  
‘ it; and I shall draw myself into no such  
‘ delemy.’ At which words her lady’s bell  
rang, and Mr Adams was forced to retire;  
nor could he gain a second opportunity with  
her before their London journey, which hap-  
pened a few days afterwards. However,  
Andrews behaved very thankfully and grate-  
fully to him for his intended kindness, which  
he told him he never would forget, and at  
the same time received from the good man  
many admonitions concerning the regulation  
of his future conduct, and his perseverance  
in innocence and industry.



## C H A P. IV.

*What happened after their journey to London.*

**N**O sooner was young Andrews arrived at London, than he began to scrape an acquaintance with his party-coloured brethren, who endeavoured to make him despise his former course of life. His hair was cut after the newest fashion, and became his chief care: he went abroad with it all the morning in papers, and dressed it out in the afternoon. They could not, however, teach him to game, swear, drink, nor any other genteel vice the town abounded with. He applied most of his leisure hours to music, in which he greatly improved himself; and became so perfect a connoisseur in that art, that he led the opinion of all the other footmen at an opera, and they never condemned or applauded a single song contrary to his approbation or dislike. He was a little too forward in riots at the play-houses and assemblies; and when he attended his lady at church (which was but seldom) he behaved with less seeming devotion than formerly: however, if he was outwardly a pretty fellow, his morals remained entirely uncorrupted, though he was at the same time smarter and

## 40 THE ADVENTURES OF

genteeler than any of the beaux in town, either in or out of livery.

His lady, who had often said of him that Joey was the handsomest and genteelest footman in the kingdom, but that it was pity he wanted spirit, began now to find that fault no longer; on the contrary, she was frequently heard to cry out, 'Ay, there is some life in this fellow.' She plainly saw the effects which the town-air hath on the soberest constitutions. She would now walk out with him into Hyde-Park in a morning, and when tired, which happened almost every minute, would lean on his arm, and converse with him in great familiarity. Whenever she stepped out of her coach, she would take him by the hand, and sometimes, for fear of stumbling, press it very hard: she admitted him to deliver messages at her bed-side in a morning, leer'd at him at table, and indulged him in all those innocent freedoms which women of figure may permit without the least fally of their virtue.

But though their virtue remains unfulled, yet now and then some small arrows will glance on the shadow of it, their reputation; and so it fell out to Lady Booby, who happened to be walking arm in arm with Joey one morning in Hyde-Park, when Lady Tittle and Lady Tattle came accidentally

By in their coach: 'Bless me,' says Lady Tittle, 'can I believe my eyes? Is that 'Lady Booby?'' 'Surely,' says Tattle, 'But what makes you surpris'd?' 'Why, 'is not that her footman?' replied Tittle. At which Tattle laughed, and cried, 'An 'old business, I assure you; is it possible you 'should not have heard it? The whole 'town hath known it this half year.' The consequence of this interview was a whisper through a hundred visits, which were separately performed by the two ladies \* the same afternoon; and might have had a mischievous effect, had it not been stopt by two fresh reputations which were published the day afterwards, and engrossed the whole talk of the town.

But whatever opinion or suspicion the scandalous inclination of defamers might entertain of Lady Booby's innocent freedoms, it is certain they made no impression on young Andrews, who never offered to encroach beyond the liberties which his Lady allowed him. A behaviour which she imputed to the violent respect he prefer-

\* It may seem an absurdity that Tattle should visit, as she actually did, to spread a known scandal: but the reader may reconcile this, by supposing with me, that notwithstanding what she says, this was her first acquaintance with it.

## 42 THE ADVENTURES OF

ved for her, and which served only to heighten a something she began to conceive, and which the next chapter will open a little farther.

### C H A P. V.

*The death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his widow, and the great purity of Joseph Andrews.*

AT this time an accident happened which put a stop to those agreeable walks, which probably would have soon puffed up the cheeks of Fame, and caused her to blow her brazen trumpet through the town; and this was no other than the death of Sir Thomas Booby, who, departing this life, left his disconsolate lady confined to her house, as closely as if she herself had been attacked by some violent disease. During the first six days the poor lady admitted none but Mrs Slipslop, and three female friends, who made a party at cards: but on the seventh she ordered Joey, whom, for a good reason, we shall hereafter call JOSEPH, to bring up her tea-kettle. The Lady being in bed, called Joseph to her, bade him sit down, and having accidentally laid her hand on his, she asked him if he had ever been in

---

love? Joseph answered with some confusion, it was time enough for one so young as himself to think on such things. 'As young as you are,' replied the Lady, 'I am convinced you are no stranger to that passion. Come, Joey,' says she, 'tell me truly, who is the happy girl whose eyes have made a conquest of you?' Joseph returned, that all the women he had ever seen, were equally indifferent to him. 'O then,' said the Lady, 'you are a general lover. Indeed you handsome fellows, like handsome women, are very long and difficult in fixing: but yet you shall never persuade me that your heart is so unsusceptible of affection; I rather impute what you say to your secrecy, a very commendable quality, and what I am far from being angry with you for. Nothing can be more unworthy in a young man than to betray any intimacies with the ladies.' 'Ladies! Madam,' said Joseph, 'I am sure I never had the impudence to think of any that deserve that name.' 'Don't pretend to too much modesty,' said she, 'for that sometimes may be impertinent; but pray, answer me this question. Suppose a lady should happen to like you; suppose she should prefer you to all your sex, and admit you to the same familiarities as you

## 44 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ might have hoped for, if you had been  
‘ born her equal, are you certain that no  
‘ vanity could tempt you to discover her?  
‘ Answer me honestly, Joseph; have you so  
‘ much more sense, and so much more virtue,  
‘ than you handsome young fellows gene-  
‘ rally have, who make no scruple of sacri-  
‘ ficing our dear reputation to your pride,  
‘ without considering the great obligation  
‘ we lay on you, by our condescension and  
‘ confidence! Can you keep a secret, my  
‘ Joey?’ ‘ Madam,’ says he, ‘ I hope your  
‘ Ladyship can’t tax me with ever betraying  
‘ the secrets of the family; and I hope, if  
‘ you was to turn me away, I might have  
‘ that character of you.’ ‘ I don’t intend to  
‘ turn you away, Joey,’ said she, and sighed,  
‘ I am afraid it is not in my power.’ She  
then raised herself a little in her bed, and  
discovered one of the whitest necks that ever  
was seen; at which Joseph blushed: ‘ La!’  
said she, in an affected surprize, ‘ what am  
‘ I doing? I have trusted myself with a man  
‘ alone, naked in bed; suppose you should  
‘ have any wicked intentions upon my ho-  
‘ nour, how should I defend myself?’ Joseph  
protested that he never had the least evil  
design against her. ‘ No,’ says she, ‘ perhaps  
‘ you may not call your designs wicked; and  
‘ perhaps they are not so.’—He swore they



were not. ‘ You misunderstand me,’ says she,  
 ‘ I mean, if they were against my honour,  
 ‘ they may not be wicked; but the world  
 ‘ calls them so. But then, say you, the world  
 ‘ will never know any thing of the matter;  
 ‘ yet would not that be trusting to your se-  
 ‘ crecy? Must not my reputation be then in  
 ‘ your power? Would you not then be my  
 ‘ master?’ Joseph begged her Ladyship to be  
 comforted; for that he would never imagine  
 the least wicked thing against her, and that  
 he had rather die a thousand deaths than  
 give her any reason to suspect him. ‘ Yes,’  
 said she, ‘ I must have reason to suspect you.  
 ‘ Are not you a man? and without vanity I  
 ‘ may pretend to some charms. But per-  
 ‘ haps you may fear I should prosecute you;  
 ‘ indeed I hope you do; and yet Heaven  
 ‘ knows I should never have the confidence  
 ‘ to appear before a court of justice; and you  
 ‘ know, Joey, I am of a forgiving temper.  
 ‘ Tell me, Joey, don’t you think I should  
 ‘ forgive you?’ ‘ Indeed, Madam,’ says  
 Joseph, ‘ I will never do any thing to dis-  
 ‘ oblige your Ladyship.’ ‘ How,’ says she,  
 ‘ do you think it would not disoblige me  
 ‘ then? Do you think I would willingly suf-  
 ‘ fer you?’ ‘ I don’t understand you, Madam,’  
 says Joseph. ‘ Don’t you?’ said she; ‘ then  
 ‘ you are either a fool, or pretend to be so;

46 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ I find I was mistaken in you. So get you  
‘ down stairs, and never let me see your face  
‘ again: your pretended innocence cannot  
‘ impose on me.’ ‘ Madam,’ said Joseph,  
‘ I would not have your Ladyship think any  
‘ evil of me, I have always endeavoured to  
‘ be a dutiful servant both to you and my  
‘ master.’ ‘ O thou villain !’ answered my  
Lady, ‘ why didst thou mention the name of  
‘ that dear man, unless to torment me, to  
‘ bring his precious memory to my mind !’  
(and then she burst into a fit of tears,) ‘ Get  
‘ thee from my sight, I shall never endure  
‘ thee more.’ At which words she turned  
away from him; and Joseph retreated from  
the room in a most disconsolate condition,  
and writ that letter, which the reader will  
find in the next chapter.

C H A P. VI.

*How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his  
sister Pamela.*

*To Mrs Pamela Andrews, living with Squire  
Booby.*

“ Dear Sister,

“ S I N C E I received your letter of your  
“ good lady’s death, we have had a  
“ misfortune of the same kind in our family.

“ My worthy master Sir Thomas died about  
 “ four days ago; and what is worse, my  
 “ poor Lady is certainly gone distracted.  
 “ None of the servants expected her to take  
 “ it so to heart, because they quarrelled al-  
 “ most every day of their lives; but no more  
 “ of that, because you know, Pamela, I  
 “ never loved to tell the secrets of my ma-  
 “ ster’s family; but to be sure you must have  
 “ known they never loved one another; and  
 “ I have heard her Ladyship wish his Ho-  
 “ nour dead above a thousand times; but  
 “ no body knows what it is to lose a friend  
 “ till they have lost him.

“ Don’t tell any body that I write, be-  
 “ cause I should not care to have folks say I  
 “ discover what passes in our family: but it  
 “ it had not been so great a lady, I should  
 “ have thought she had had a mind to me.  
 “ Dear Pamela, don’t tell any body; but she  
 “ ordered me to sit down by her bed-side,  
 “ when she was in naked bed; and she held  
 “ my hand, and talked exactly as a lady  
 “ does to her sweetheart in a stage-play,  
 “ which I have seen in Covent-Garden,  
 “ while she wanted him to be no better than  
 “ he should be.

“ If Madam be mad, I shall not care for  
 “ staying long in the family; so I heartily  
 “ wish you could get me a place either at

## 48 THE ADVENTURES OF

“ the Squire’s, or some other neighbouring  
“ gentleman’s, unless it be true that you are  
“ going to be married to Parson Williams,  
“ as folks talk, and then I should be very  
“ willing to be his clerk; for which you  
“ know I am qualified, being able to read,  
“ and to set a psalm.

“ I fancy I shall be discharged very soon;  
“ and the moment I am, unless I hear from  
“ you, I shall return to my old master’s  
“ country-seat, if it be only to see Parson  
“ Adams, who is the best man in the world.  
“ London is a bad place, and there is so  
“ little good-fellowship, that the next-door  
“ neighbours don’t know one another. Pray  
“ give my service to all friends that enquire  
“ for me; so I rest

“ Your loving brother,

“ JOSEPH ANDREWS.”

As soon as Joseph had sealed and directed this letter, he walked down stairs, where he met Mrs Slipflop; with whom we shall take this opportunity to bring the reader a little better acquainted. She was a maiden gentlewoman of about forty-five years of age, who having made a small slip in her youth, had continued a good maid ever since. She was not at this time remarkably handsome;

being very short, and rather too corpulent in body, and somewhat red, with the addition of pimples in the face. Her nose was likewise rather too large, and her eyes too little; nor did she resemble a cow so much in her breath, as in two brown globes which she carried before her; one of her legs was also a little shorter than the other, which occasioned her to limp as she walked. This fair creature had long cast the eyes of affection on Joseph, in which she had not met with quite so good success as she probably wished, though, besides the allurements of her native charms, she had given him tea, sweetmeats, wine, and many other delicacies, of which, by keeping the keys, she had the absolute command. Joseph, however, had not returned the least gratitude to all these favours, not even so much as a kiss; though I would not insinuate she was so easily to be satisfied: for surely then he would have been highly blameable. The truth is, she was arrived at an age when she thought she might indulge herself in any liberties with a man, without the danger of bringing a third person into the world to betray them. She imagined, that, by so long a self-denial, she had not only made amends for the small slip of her youth above hinted at, but had likewise laid up a quantity of merit to excuse any future

failings. In a word, she resolved to give a loose to her amorous inclinations, and to pay off the debt of pleasure she found she owed herself, as fast as possible.

With these charms of person, and in this disposition of mind, she encountered poor Joseph at the bottom of the stairs, and asked him if he would drink a glass of something good this morning. Joseph, whose spirits were not a little cast down, very readily and thankfully accepted the offer; and together they went into a closet, where having delivered him a full glass of ratafia, and desired him to sit down, Mrs Slipslop thus began:

‘ Sure nothing can be a more simple con-  
 ‘ tract in a woman, than to place her affec-  
 ‘ tions on a boy. If I had ever thought it  
 ‘ would have been my fate, I should have  
 ‘ wished to die a thousand deaths rather  
 ‘ than live to see that day. If we like a man,  
 ‘ the lightest hint sophisticates. Whereas a  
 ‘ boy proposes upon us to break through all  
 ‘ the regulations of modesty, before we can  
 ‘ make any oppression upon him.’ Joseph, who  
 did not understand a word she said, answered,  
 ‘ Yes, Madam;—’ ‘ Yes, Madam,’ replied  
 Mrs Slipslop, with some warmth, ‘ Do you  
 ‘ intend to resent my passion? Is it not e-  
 ‘ nough, ungrateful as you are, to make no  
 ‘ return to all the favours I have done you:



‘ but you must treat me with ironing? Bar-  
 ‘ barous monster ! how have I deserved that  
 ‘ my passion should be resuted and treated  
 ‘ with ironing?’ ‘ Madam,’ answered Joseph,  
 ‘ I don’t understand your hard words: but I  
 ‘ am certain you have no occasion to call me  
 ‘ ungrateful: for so far from intending you  
 ‘ any wrong, I have always loved you as  
 ‘ if you had been my own mother.’ ‘ How,  
 ‘ firrah! says Mrs Slipslop, in a rage: ‘ Your  
 ‘ own mother? Do you assinate that I am old  
 ‘ enough to be your mother? I don’t know  
 ‘ what a stripling may think; but I believe  
 ‘ a man would refer me to any greensickness  
 ‘ silly girl whatsoever: but I ought to  
 ‘ despise you rather than be angry with you,  
 ‘ for referring the conversation of girls to  
 ‘ that of a woman of sense.’ ‘ Madam,’ says  
 Joseph, ‘ I am sure I have always valued the  
 ‘ honour you did me by your conversation  
 ‘ for I know you are a woman of learning.’  
 ‘ Yes, but, Joseph,’ said she, a little softened  
 by the compliment to her learning, ‘ if you  
 ‘ had a value for me, you certainly would  
 ‘ have found some method of shewing it me;  
 ‘ for I am convicted you must see the value  
 ‘ I have for you. Yes, Joseph, my eyes,  
 ‘ whether I would or no, must have declared  
 ‘ a passion I cannot conquer.—Oh! Jo-  
 ‘ seph!’

As when a hungry tigress, who long has traversed the woods in fruitless search, sees within the reach of her claws a lamb, she prepares to leap on her prey; or as a voracious pike, of immense size, surveys through the liquid element a roach, or a gudgeon, which cannot escape her jaws, opens them wide to swallow the little fish; so did Mrs Slipflop prepare to lay her violent amorous hands on the poor Joseph, when luckily her mistress's bell rung, and delivered the intended martyr from her clutches. She was obliged to leave him abruptly, and to defer the execution of her purpose till some other time. We shall therefore return to the Lady Booby, and give our reader some account of her behaviour, after she was left by Joseph in a temper of mind not greatly different from that of the inflamed Slipflop.

## C H A P. VII.

*Sayings of wise men. A dialogue between the Lady and her maid; and a panegyric, or rather satire, on the passion of love, in the sublime style.*

**I**T is the observation of some ancient sage, whose name I have forgot, that the passions operate differently on the human mind, as diseases on the body, in proportion to the

strength or weakness, foundness or rottenness of the one and the other.

We hope therefore a judicious reader will give himself some pains to observe, what we have so greatly laboured to describe, the different operations of this passion of love in the gentle and cultivated mind of the Lady Booby, from those which it effected in the less polished and coarser disposition of Mrs Slipshod.

Another philosopher, whose name also at present escapes my memory, hath somewhere said, that resolutions taken in the absence of the beloved object, are very apt to vanish in its presence; on both which wise sayings, the following chapter may serve as a comment.

No sooner had Joseph left the room in the manner we had before related, than the Lady, enraged at her disappointment, began to reflect with severity on her conduct. Her love was now changed to disdain, which pride assisted to torment her. She despised herself for the meanness of her passion, and Joseph for its ill success. However, she had now got the better of it in her own opinion, and determined immediately to dismiss the object. After much turning and tossing in her bed, and many soliloquies, which, if we had no better matter for our reader, we

## 54 THE ADVENTURES OF

would give him, she at last rung the bell as above-mentioned, and was presently attended by Mrs Slipslop, who was not much better pleased with Joseph than the Lady herself.

‘Slipslop,’ said Lady Booby, ‘when did you see Joseph?’ The poor woman was surprised at the unexpected sound of his name, at so critical a time, that she had the greatest difficulty to conceal the confusion she was under from her mistress; whom she answered, nevertheless, with pretty good confidence, though not entirely void of fear of suspicion, that she had not seen him that morning. ‘I am afraid,’ said Lady Booby, ‘he is a wild young fellow.’ ‘That he is,’ said Slipslop, ‘and a wicked one too. To my knowledge he games, drinks, swears, and fights eternally: besides, he is horribly indicted to wenching.’ ‘Ay!’ said the Lady, ‘I never heard that of him.’ ‘O Madam,’ answered the other, ‘he is so lewd a rascal, that if your Ladyship keeps him much longer, you will not have one virgin in your house except myself. And yet I can’t conceive what the wenches see in him, to be so foolishly fond as they are; in my eyes, he is as ugly a scarecrow as ever I upheld.’ ‘Nay,’ said the Lady, ‘the boy is well enough.’ ‘La, Ma’am,

cries Slipflop, ' I think him the raginati-  
 ' callest fellow in the family.' ' Sure, Slip-  
 ' flop,' says she, ' you are mistaken; but  
 ' which of the women do you most suspect?'  
 ' Madam,' says Slipflop, ' there is Betty  
 ' the chambermaid, I am almost convicted,  
 ' is with child by him.' ' Ay!' says the  
 Lady, ' then pray pay her her wages in-  
 ' stantly. I will keep no such fluts in my  
 ' family. And as for Joseph, you may dis-  
 ' card him too.' ' Would your Ladyship  
 ' have him paid off immediately?' cries Slip-  
 flop, ' for perhaps when Betty is gone, he  
 ' may mend; and really the boy is a good  
 ' servant, and a strong, healthy, luscious boy  
 ' enough.' ' This morning,' answered the  
 Lady with some vehemence. ' I wish, Ma-  
 ' dam,' cries Slipflop, ' your Ladyship would  
 ' be so good as to try him a little longer.'  
 ' I will not have my commands disputed,'  
 said the Lady, ' sure you are not fond of  
 ' him yourself.' ' I, Madam?' cries Slip-  
 flop, reddening, if not blushing, ' I should  
 ' be sorry to think your Ladyship had any  
 ' reason to respect me of fondness for a fel-  
 ' low; and if it be your pleasure, I shall ful-  
 ' fill it with as much reluctance as possible.'  
 ' As little, I suppose you mean,' said the  
 Lady, ' and so about it instantly.' Mrs  
 Slipflop went out; and the Lady had scarce



## 56 THE ADVENTURES OF

taken two turns, before she fell to knocking and ringing with great violence. Slipflop, who did not travel post-haste, soon returned, and was countermanded as to Joseph, but ordered to send Betty about her business without delay. She went out a second time with much greater alacrity than before; when the Lady began immediately to accuse herself of want of resolution, and to apprehend the return of her affection with its pernicious consequences: she therefore applied herself again to the bell, and resummoned Mrs Slipflop into her presence; who again returned, and was told by her mistress, that she had considered better of the matter, and was absolutely resolved to turn away Joseph; which she ordered her to do immediately. Slipflop, who knew the violence of her Lady's temper, and would not venture her place for any Adonis or Hercules in the universe, left her a third time; which she had no sooner done, than the little god Cupid, fearing he had not yet done the Lady's business, took a fresh arrow with the sharpest point out of his quiver, and shot it directly into her heart: in other and plainer language, the Lady's passion got the better of her reason. She called back Slipflop once more, and told her, she had resolved to see the boy, and examine him herself; therefore bid her send him up.



This wavering in her mistress's temper probably put something into the waiting-gentlewoman's head, not necessary to mention to the sagacious reader.

Lady Booby was going to call her back again, but could not prevail with herself. The next consideration therefore was, how she should behave to Joseph when he came in. She resolved to preserve all the dignity of the woman of fashion to her servant, and to indulge herself in this last view of Joseph (for that she was most certainly resolved it should be) at his own expence, by first insulting, and then discarding him.

O Love, what monstrous tricks dost thou play with thy votaries of both sexes! How dost thou deceive them, and make them deceive themselves! Their follies are thy delight! their sighs make thee laugh, and their pangs are thy merriment!

Not the great Rich, who turns men into monkeys, wheelbarrows, and whatever else best humours his fancy, hath so strangely metamorphosed the human shape; nor the great Cibber, who confounds all number, gender, and breaks through every rule of grammar at his will, hath so distorted the English language, as thou dost metamorphose and distort the human senses.

Thou puttest out our eyes, stoppest up our

## 58 THE ADVENTURES OF

ears, and takest away the power of our nostrils; so that we can neither see the largest object, hear the loudest noise, nor smell the most poignant perfume. Again, when thou pleasest, thou canst make a molehill appear as a mountain, a jew's harp sound like a trumpet, and a daizy smell like a violet. Thou canst make cowardice brave, avarice generous, pride humble, and cruelty tender-hearted. In short, thou turnest the heart of man inside-out, as a juggler doth a petticoat, and bringest whatsoever pleaseth thee out from it. If there be any one who doubts all this, let him read the next chapter.

### C H A P. VIII.

*In which, after some very fine writing, the history goes on, and relates the interview between the Lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an example, which we despair of seeing followed by his sex, in this vicious age.*

**N**OW the rake Hesperus had called for his breeches, and having well rubbed his drowsy eyes, prepared to dress himself for all night; by whose example his brother rakes on earth likewise leave those beds, in which they had slept away the day. Now Thetis, the good housewife, began to put

on the pot in order to regale the good man Phœbus, after his daily labours were over. In vulgar language, it was in the evening when Joseph attended his Lady's orders.

But as it becomes us to preserve the character of this Lady, who is the heroine of our tale; and as we have naturally a wonderful tenderness for that beautiful part of the human species, called the Fair Sex; before we discover too much of her frailty to our reader, it will be proper to give him a lively idea of the vast temptation which overcame all the efforts of a modest and virtuous mind; and then we humbly hope his good-nature will rather pity than condemn the imperfection of human virtue.

Nay, the ladies themselves will, we hope, be induced, by considering the uncommon variety of charms which united in this young man's person, to bridle their rampant passion for chastity, and be at least as mild as their violent modesty and virtue will permit them, in censuring the conduct of a woman, who, perhaps, was in her own disposition as chaste as those pure and sanctified virgins, who, after a life innocently spent in the gaieties of the town, begin about fifty to attend twice *per diem*, at the polite churches and chapels, to return thanks for the grace which preserved them formerly among beaux, from

## 60 THE ADVENTURES OF

temptations perhaps less powerful than what now attacked the Lady Booby.

Mr Joseph Andrews was now in the one-and-twentieth year of his age. He was of the highest degree of middle stature. His limbs were put together with great elegance, and no less strength. His legs and thighs were formed in the exactest proportion. His shoulders were broad and brawny; but yet his arms hung so easily, that he had all the symptoms of strength without the least clumsiness. His hair was of a nut-brown colour, and was displayed in wanton ringlets down his back. His forehead was high, his eyes dark, and as full of sweetness as of fire. His nose a little inclined to the Roman. His teeth white and even. His lips full, red, and soft. His beard was only rough on his chin and upper lip; but his cheeks, in which his blood glowed, were overspread with a thick down. His countenance had a tenderness joined with a sensibility inexpressible. Add to this the most perfect neatness in his dress, and an air, which, to those who have not seen many noblemen, would give an idea of nobility.

Such was the person who now appeared before the Lady. She viewed him some time in silence, and twice or thrice before she spake, changed her mind as to the man-

ner in which she should begin. At length she said to him, ‘ Joseph, I am sorry to hear  
 ‘ such complaints against you ; I am told  
 ‘ you behave so rudely to the maids, that  
 ‘ they cannot do their business in quiet ; I  
 ‘ mean those who are not wicked enough to  
 ‘ hearken to your solicitations. As to others,  
 ‘ they may perhaps not call you rude : for  
 ‘ there are wicked flats who make one ashamed  
 ‘ of one’s own sex ; and are as ready to  
 ‘ admit any nauseous familiarity as fellows  
 ‘ to offer it : nay, there are such in my family ;  
 ‘ but they shall not stay in it ; that  
 ‘ impudent trollop, who is with child by  
 ‘ you, is discharged by this time.’

As a person who is struck through the heart with a thunderbolt looks extremely surprised, nay, and perhaps is so too — thus the poor Joseph received the false accusation of his mistress ; he blushed and looked confounded, which she misinterpreted to be symptoms of his guilt, and thus went on :

‘ Come hither, Joseph : another mistress  
 ‘ might discard you for these offences ; but  
 ‘ I have compassion for your youth, and if I  
 ‘ could be certain you would be no more  
 ‘ guilty—Consider, child, (laying her hand  
 ‘ carelessly upon his), you are a handsome  
 ‘ young fellow, and might do better ; you  
 ‘ might make your fortune.’ — ‘ Madam,’

## 62 THE ADVENTURES OF

said Joseph, ' I do assure your Ladyship, I  
 ' don't know whether any maid in the house  
 ' is man or woman.' ' Oh, fy! Joseph,'  
 answered the Lady, ' don't commit another  
 ' crime in denying the truth. I could par-  
 ' don the first; but I hate a liar.' ' Madam,'  
 cries Joseph, ' I hope your Ladyship will  
 ' not be offended at my asserting my inno-  
 ' cence: for by all that is sacred, I have  
 ' never offered more than kissing.' ' Kissing!'  
 said the Lady, with great discomposure of  
 countenance, and more redness in her cheeks,  
 than anger in her eyes, ' do you call that  
 ' no crime? kissing, Joseph, is as a prologue  
 ' to a play. Can I believe a young fellow  
 ' of your age and complexion will be content  
 ' with kissing? No, Joseph, there is no wo-  
 ' man who grants that, but will grant more;  
 ' and I am deceived greatly in you, if you  
 ' would not put her closely to it. What  
 ' would you think, Joseph, if I admitted you  
 ' to kiss me?' Joseph reply'd, ' He would  
 ' sooner die than have any such thought.'  
 ' And yet, Joseph,' returned she, ' ladies  
 ' have admitted their footmen to such fami-  
 ' liarities; and footmen, I confess to you,  
 ' much less deserving them; fellows without  
 ' half your charms: for such might almost  
 ' excuse the crime. Tell me, therefore, Jo-  
 ' seph, if I should admit you to such freedom,



‘ what would you think of me?--tell me freely.’  
 ‘ Madam,’ said Joseph, ‘ I should think  
 ‘ your Ladyship condescended a great deal  
 ‘ below yourself.’ ‘ Pugh!’ said she, ‘ that  
 ‘ I am to answer to myself: but would you  
 ‘ not insist on more? Would you be con-  
 ‘ tented with a kiss? Would not your inclina-  
 ‘ tions be all on fire rather by such a favour?’  
 ‘ Madam,’ said Joseph, ‘ if they were, I hope  
 ‘ I should be able to controul them, without  
 ‘ suffering them to get the better of my vir-  
 ‘ tue.’—You have heard, reader, poets talk  
 of the statue of Surprise; you have heard  
 likewise, or else you have heard very little,  
 how Surprise made one of the sons of Cræsus  
 speak though he was dumb. You have seen  
 the faces, in the eighteen-penny gallery,  
 when through the trap-door, to soft or no  
 music, Mr Bridgewater, Mr William Mills,  
 or some other of ghostly appearance, hath  
 ascended with a face all pale with powder,  
 and a shirt all bloody with ribbons: but  
 from none of these, nor from Phidias, or  
 Praxiteles, if they should return to life —  
 no, not from the inimitable pencil of my  
 friend Hogarth, could you receive such an  
 idea of surprise, as would have entered in at  
 your eyes, had they beheld the Lady Booby,  
 when those last words issued out from the  
 mouth of Joseph.—‘ Your virtue!’ said

## 64 THE ADVENTURES OF

the Lady, recovering after a silence of two minutes, 'I shall never survive it. Your  
' virtue! Intolerable confidence! have you  
' the assurance to pretend, that when a Lady  
' demeans herself to throw aside the rules of  
' decency, in order to honour you with the  
' highest favour in her power, your virtue  
' should resist her inclination? that when  
' she had conquered her own virtue, she  
' should find an obstruction in yours?' 'Ma-  
' dam,' said Joseph, 'I can't see why her ha-  
' ving no virtue, should be a reason against  
' my having any: or why, because I am a  
' man; or because I am poor; my virtue  
' must be subservient to her pleasures.' 'I  
' am out of patience,' cries the Lady, 'did  
' ever mortal hear of a man's virtue! Did  
' ever the greatest, or the gravest men pre-  
' tend to any of this kind! Will magistrates  
' who punish lewdness, or parsons who preach  
' against it, make any scruple of committing  
' it? and can a boy, a stripling, have the  
' confidence to talk of his virtue?' 'Madam,'  
says Joseph, 'that boy is the brother of Pa-  
' mela, and would be ashamed that the cha-  
' rity of his family, which is preserved in  
' her, should be stained in him. If there are  
' such men as your Ladyship mentions, I am  
' sorry for it; and I wish they had an oppor-  
' tunity of reading over those letters which

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 65

' my father hath sent me of my sister Pame-  
 ' la's; nor do I doubt but such an example  
 ' would amend them.' ' You impudent vil-  
 ' lain,' cries the Lady in a rage, ' do you  
 ' insult me with the follies of my relation,  
 ' who hath exposed himself all over the  
 ' country upon your sister's account? a little  
 ' vixen whom I have always wondered my  
 ' late Lady Booby ever kept in her house.  
 ' Sirrah! get out of my sight, and prepare  
 ' to set out this night; for I will order you  
 ' your wages immediately, and you shall be  
 ' stripped and turned away.' ' Madam,'  
 says Joseph, ' I am sorry I have offended  
 ' your Ladyship, I am sure I never intended  
 ' it.' ' Yes, sirrah,' cries she, ' you have had  
 ' the vanity to misconstrue the little innocent  
 ' freedom I took, in order to try whether  
 ' what I heard was true. O' my conscience,  
 ' you have had the assurance to imagine I  
 ' was fond of you myself.' Joseph answer-  
 ed, he had only spoke out of tenderness for  
 his virtue; at which words she flew into a  
 violent passion, and, refusing to hear more,  
 ordered him instantly to leave the room.

He was no sooner gone, than she burst  
 forth into the following exclamation:  
 ' Whither doth this violent passion hurry us?  
 ' What meanesses do we submit to from its  
 ' impulse? Wisely we resist its first and least

66 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ approaches ; for it is then only we can assure  
‘ ourselves the victory. No woman could  
‘ ever safely say, so far only will I go. Have  
‘ I not exposed myself to the refusal of my  
‘ footman? I cannot bear the reflection.’  
Upon which she applied herself to the bell,  
and rung it with infinite more violence than  
was necessary, the faithful Slipflop attending  
near at hand: to say the truth, she had con-  
ceived a suspicion at her last interview with  
her mistress; and had waited ever since in the  
antichamber, having carefully applied her  
ears to the key-hole during the whole time  
that the preceding conversation passed be-  
tween Joseph and the Lady.

C H A P. IX.

*What passed between the Lady and Mrs Slip-  
flop, in which we prophecy there are some  
strokes which every one will not truly com-  
prehend at the first reading.*

‘ SLIPSLOP,’ said the Lady, ‘ I find  
‘ too much reason to believe all thou  
‘ hast told me of this wicked Joseph; I have  
‘ determined to part with him instantly; so  
‘ go you to the steward, and bid him pay  
‘ him his wages.’ Slipflop, who had pre-  
served hitherto a distance to her Lady, rather  
out of necessity than inclination, and who

thought the knowledge of this secret had thrown down all distinction between them, answered her mistress very pertly, 'She wished she knew her own mind; and that she was certain she would call her back again, before she was got half-way down stairs.' The Lady replied, 'she had taken a resolution, and was resolved to keep it.' 'I am sorry for it,' cries Slipflop; 'and if I had known you would have punished the poor lad so severely, you should never have heard a particle of the matter. Here's a fufs indeed, about nothing!' 'Nothing!' returned my Lady, 'do you think I will countenance lewdness in my house!' 'If you will turn away every footman,' said Slipflop, 'that is a lover of the sport, you must soon open the coach door yourself, or get a set of mophrodites to wait upon you; and I am sure I hated the sight of them even singing in an opera.' 'Do as I bid you,' says my Lady, 'and don't shock my ears with your beastly language.' 'Marry-come-up,' cries Slipflop, 'people's ears are sometimes the nicest part about them.'

The Lady, who began to admire the new stile in which her waiting-gentlewoman delivered herself, and, by the conclusion of her speech, suspected somewhat of the truth, called her

back, and desired to know what she meant by the extraordinary degree of freedom in which she thought proper to indulge her tongue. 'Freedom!' says Slipflop, 'I don't know what you call freedom, Madam; servants have tongues as well as their mistresses.' 'Yes, and fancy ones too,' answered the Lady, 'but I assure you I shall bear no such impertinence.' 'Impertinence! I don't know that I am impertinent,' says Slipflop. 'Yes indeed you are,' cries my Lady, 'and unless you mend your manners, this house is no place for you.' 'Manners!' cries Slipflop, 'I never was thought to want manners nor modesty neither; and for places, there are more places than one; and I know what I know.' 'What do you know, mistress?' answered the Lady. 'I am not obliged to tell that to every body,' says Slipflop, 'any more than I am obliged to keep it a secret.' 'I desire you would provide yourself,' answered the Lady. 'With all my heart,' replied the waiting-gentlewoman; and so departed in a passion, and flapped the door after her.

The Lady too plainly perceived that her waiting-gentlewoman knew more than she would willingly have had her acquainted with; and this she imputed to Joseph's ha-



ving discovered to her what past at the first interview. This therefore blew up her rage against him, and confirmed her in a resolution of parting with him.

But the dismissing Mrs Slipflop was a point not so easily to be resolved upon: she had the utmost tenderness for her reputation, as she knew on that depended many of the most valuable blessings of life; particularly cards, making curtesies in public places, and, above all, the pleasure of demolishing the reputations of others, in which innocent amusement she had an extraordinary delight. She therefore determined to submit to any insult from a servant, rather than run a risk of losing the title to so many great privileges.

She therefore sent for her steward, Mr Peter Pounce, and ordered him to pay Joseph his wages, to strip off his livery, and turn him out of the house that evening.

She then called Slipflop up, and after refreshing her spirits with a small cordial which she kept in her closet, she began in the following manner:

‘ Slipflop, why will you, who know my  
 ‘ passionate temper, attempt to provoke me  
 ‘ by your answers? I am convinced you are  
 ‘ an honest servant, and should be very un-  
 ‘ willing to part with you. I believe like-  
 ‘ wise, you have found me an indulgent mis-

‘ trefs on many occasions, and have as little  
 ‘ reason on your side to desire a change. I  
 ‘ can’t help being surpris’d, therefore, that  
 ‘ you will take the surest method to offend  
 ‘ me: I mean repeating my words, which  
 ‘ you know I have always detested.’

The prudent waiting-gentlewoman had duely weigh’d the whole matter, and found, on mature deliberation, that a good place in possession, was better than one in expectation. As she found her mistress, therefore, inclin’d to relent, she thought proper also to put on some small condescension; which was as readily accepted: and so the affair was reconcil’d, all offences forgiven, and a present of a gown and petticoat made her, as an instance of her lady’s future favour.

She offer’d once or twice to speak in favour of Joseph: but found her lady’s heart so obdurate, that she prudently dropt all such efforts. She consider’d there were more footmen in the house, and some as stout fellows, though not quite so handsome as Joseph; besides, the reader hath already seen her tender advances had not met with the encouragement she might have reasonably expected. She thought she had thrown away a great deal of sack and sweet-meats on an ungrateful rascal; and being a little inclin’d to the opinion of that female sect, who hold

one lusty young fellow to be near as good as another lusty young fellow, she at last gave up Joseph and his cause, and with a triumph over her passion highly commendable, walked off with her present, and with great tranquillity paid a visit to a stone-bottle, which is of sovereign use to a philosophical temper.

She left not her mistress so easy. The poor lady could not reflect, without agony, that her dear reputation was in the power of her servants. All her comfort, as to Joseph, was, that she hoped he did not understand her meaning; at least, she could say for herself, she had not plainly expressed any thing to him; and as to Mrs Slipflop, she imagined she could bribe her to secrecy.

But what hurt her most was, that in reality she had not so entirely conquered her passion; the little god lay lurking in her heart, though anger and disdain so hoodwinked her, that she could not see him. She was a thousand times on the very brink of revoking the sentence she had passed against the poor youth. Love became his advocate, and whispered many things in his favour. Honour likewise endeavoured to vindicate his crime, and Pity to mitigate his punishment; on the other side, Pride and Revenge spoke as loudly against him; and thus the poor

lady was tortured with perplexity, opposite passions diltracting and tearing her mind different ways.

So have I seen, in the hall of Westminster, where Serjeant Bramble hath been retained on the right side, and Serjeant Puzzle on the left, the balance of opinion (so equal were there fees) alternately incline to either scale. Now Bramble throws in an argument, and Puzzle's scale strikes the beam; again, Bramble shares the like fate, overpowered by the weight of Puzzle. Here Bramble hits, there Puzzle strikes; here one has you, there t'other has you, 'till at last all becomes one scene of confusion in the tortured minds of the hearers; equal wagers are laid on the success, and neither judge nor jury can possibly make any thing of the matter; all things are so enveloped by the careful serjeants, in doubt and obscurity.

Or as it happens in the conscience, where honour and honesty pull one way, and a bribe and necessity an other.— If it was our present business only to make similes, we could produce many more to this purpose: but a simile (as well as a word) to the wife. We shall therefore see a little after our hero, for whom the reader is doubtless in some pain.

## C H A P. X.

*Joseph writes another letter; His transactions with Mr Peter Pounce, &c. with his departure from Lady Booby.*

**T**HE disconsolate Joseph would not have had an understanding sufficient for the principal subject of such a book as this, if he had any longer misunderstood the drift of his mistress; and indeed, that he did not discern it sooner, the reader will be pleased to apply to an unwillingness in him to discover what he must condemn in her as a fault. Having therefore quitted her presence, he retired into his own garret, and entered himself into an ejaculation on the numberless calamities which attend beauty, and the misfortune it was to be handsomer than one's neighbours.

He then sat down and addressed himself to his sister Pamela, in the following words:

“ Dear sister Pamela,  
 “ **H**OPING you are well, what news  
 “ have I to tell you! O Pamela, my  
 “ mistress is fallen in love with me — That  
 “ is, what great folks call falling in love, she  
 “ has a mind to ruin me: but I hope I shall  
 “ have more resolution and more grace than

74 THE ADVENTURES OF

“ to part with my virtue to any lady upon  
“ earth.

“ Mr Adams hath often told me, that  
“ chastity is as great a virtue in a man as  
“ in a woman. He says he never knew any  
“ more than his wife, and I shall endeavour  
“ to follow his example. Indeed, it is owing  
“ entirely to his excellent sermons and ad-  
“ vice, together with your letters, that I  
“ have been able to resist a temptation, which  
“ he says no man complies with but he re-  
“ pents in this world, or is damned for it in  
“ the next; and why should I trust to re-  
“ pentance on my death-bed, since I may  
“ die in my sleep? What fine things are good  
“ advice and good examples! But I am glad  
“ she turned me out of the chamber as she  
“ did: for I had once almost forgotten every  
“ word Parson Adams had ever said to me.

“ I don't doubt, dear sister, but you will  
“ have grace to preserve your virtue against  
“ all trials; and I beg you earnestly to pray  
“ I may be enabled to preserve mine: for  
“ truly it is very severely attacked by more  
“ than one: but I hope I shall copy your  
“ example, and that of Joseph my namesake;  
“ and maintain my virtue against all tempta-  
“ tions.”

Joseph had not finished his letter, when he  
was summoned down stairs by Mr Peter



Pounce, to receive his wages: for, besides that out of eight pounds a year he allowed his father and mother four, he had been obliged, in order to furnish himself with musical instruments, to apply to the generosity of the aforesaid Peter, who, on urgent occasions, used to advance the servants their wages: not before they were due, but before they were payable; that is, perhaps half a year after they were due; and this at the moderate premium of fifty *per cent.* or a little more; by which charitable methods, together with lending money to other people, and even to his own master and mistress, the honest man had from nothing, in a few years, amassed a small sum of twenty thousand pounds or thereabouts.

Joseph having received his little remainder of wages, and having stripped off his livery, was forced to borrow a frock and breeches of one of the servants; (for he was so beloved in the family, that they would all have lent him anything:) and being told by Peter, that he must not stay a moment longer in the house than was necessary to pack up his linen, which he easily did in a very narrow compass, he took a melancholy leave of his fellow-servants, and set out at seven in the evening.

He had proceeded the length of two or

## 76 THE ADVENTURES OF

three streets before he absolutely determined with himself, whether he should leave the town that night, or, procuring a lodging, wait till the morning. At last, the moon shining very bright helped him to come to a resolution of beginning his journey immediately, to which likewise he had some other inducements; which the reader, without being a conjurer, cannot possibly guess, till we have given him those hints which it may be now proper to open.

### C H A P. XI.

*Of several new matters not expected.*

**I**T is an observation sometimes made, that to indicate our idea of a simple fellow, we say, he is easily to be seen through; nor do I believe it a more improper denotation of a simple book. Instead of applying this to any particular performance, we chuse rather to remark the contrary in this history, where the scene opens itself by small degrees; and he is a sagacious reader who can see two chapters before him.

For this reason we have not hitherto hinted a matter which now seems necessary to be explained; since it may be wondered at, first that Joseph made such extraordinary haste out of town, which hath been already shewn; and secondly, which will be now shewn, that

instead of proceeding to the habitation of his father and mother, or to his beloved sister Pamela, he chose rather to set out full speed to the Lady Booby's country seat, which he had left on his journey to London.

Be it known then, that in the same parish where this seat stood, there lived a young girl whom Joseph (tho' the best of sons and brothers) longed more impatiently to see than his parents or his sister. She was a poor girl, who had formerly been bred up in Sir John's family; whence, a little before the journey to London, she had been discarded by Mrs Slip-slop on account of her extraordinary beauty; for I never could find any other reason.

This young creature (who now lived with a farmer in the parish) had been always beloved by Joseph, and returned his affection. She was two years only younger than our hero. They had been acquainted from their infancy, and had conceived a very early liking for each other, which had grown to such a degree of affection, that Mr Adams had with much ado prevented them from marrying, and persuaded them to wait, till a few years service and thrift had a little improved their experience, and enabled them to live comfortably together.

They followed this good man's advice, as indeed his word was little less than a law in his parish: for as he had shewn his parish-

ioners, by an uniform behaviour of thirty-five years duration, that he had their good entirely at heart; so they consulted him on every occasion, and very seldom acted contrary to his opinion.

Nothing can be imagined more tender than was the parting between these two lovers. A thousand sighs heaved the bosom of Joseph; a thousand tears distilled from the lovely eyes of Fanny, (for that was her name): though her modesty would only suffer her to admit his eager kisses, her violent love made her more than passive in his embraces; and she often pulled him to her breast with a soft pressure, which, though perhaps it would not have squeezed an insect to death, caused more emotion in the heart of Joseph than the closest Cornish hug could have done.

The reader may perhaps wonder that so fond a pair should during a twelvemonth's absence never converse with one another; indeed there was but one reason which did, or could have prevented them; and this was, that poor Fanny could neither write nor read; nor could she be prevailed upon to transmit the delicacies of her tender and chaste passion, by the hand of an amanuensis.

They contented themselves therefore with frequent enquiries after each other's health,

with a mutual confidence in each other's fidelity, and the prospect of their future happiness.

Having explained these matters to our reader, and, as far as possible, satisfied all his doubts, we return to honest Joseph, whom we left just set out on his travels by the light of the moon.

Those who have read any romance or poetry ancient or modern, must have been informed, that love hath wings; by which they are not to understand, as some young ladies by mistake have done, that a lover can fly; the writers, by this ingenious allegory, intended to insinuate no more, than that lovers do not march like horse-guards; in short, that they put the best leg foremost; which our lusty youth, who could walk with any man, did so heartily on this occasion, that within four hours he reached a famous house of hospitality well known to the western traveller. It presents you a lion on a sign-post: and the master, who was christened Timothy, is commonly called plain Tim. Some have conceived that he hath particularly chosen the lion for his sign, as he doth in countenance greatly resemble that magnanimous beast, though his disposition favours more of the sweetness of the lamb. He is a person well received among all sorts of men,



80 THE ADVENTURES OF

being qualified to render himself agreeable to any; as he is well versed in history and politics, hath a smattering in law and divinity, cracks a good jest, and plays wonderfully well on the French-horn.

A violent storm of hail forced Joseph to take shelter in this inn, where he remembered Sir Thomas had dined in his way to town. Joseph had no sooner seated himself by the kitchen fire, than Timothens, observing his livery, began to condole the loss of his late master; who was, he said, his very particular and intimate acquaintance, with whom he had cracked many a merry bottle, aye many a dozen in his time. He then remarked, that all those things were over now, all past, and just as if they had never been; and concluded with an excellent observation on the certainty of death, which his wife said was indeed very true. A fellow now arrived at the same inn with two horses, one of which he was leading farther down into the country to meet his master; these he put into the stable, and came and took his place by Joseph's side, who immediately knew him to be the servant of a neighbouring gentleman, who used to visit at their house.

This fellow was likewise forced in by the storm; for he had orders to go twenty miles farther that evening, and luckily on the same

---



## JOSEPH ANDREWS. 81

road which Joseph himself intended to take. He therefore embraced this opportunity of complimenting his friend with his master's horses, (notwithstanding he had received express commands to the contrary), which was readily accepted; and so, after they had drunk a loving pot, and the storm was over, they set out together.

### C H A P. XII.

*Containing many surprising adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.*

**N**OTHING remarkable happened on the road, till their arrival at the inn to which the horses were ordered; whither they came about two in the morning. The moon then shone very bright; and Joseph making his friend a present of a pint of wine, and thanking him for the favour of his horse, notwithstanding all entreaties to the contrary, proceeded on his journey on foot.

He had not gone above two miles, charmed with the hopes of shortly seeing his beloved Fanny, when he was met by two fellows in a narrow lane, and ordered to stand and deliver. He readily gave them all the money he had, which was somewhat less

## 82 THE ADVENTURES OF

than two pounds; and told them he hoped they would be so generous as to return him a few shillings, to defray his charges on his way home.

One of the ruffians answered with an oath, 'Yes, we will give you something presently: but first strip and be d---n'd to you.'----- 'Strip,' cried the other, 'or I'll blow your brains to the devil.' Joseph remembering that he had borrowed his coat and breeches of a friend, and that he should be ashamed of making any excuse for not returning them, replied, he hoped they would not insist on his clothes, which were not worth much, but consider the coldness of the night. 'You are cold, are you, rascal!' says one of the robbers, 'I'll warm you with a vengeance;' and, damning his eyes, snapt a pistol at his head; which he had no sooner done, than the other levelled a blow at him with his stick, which Joseph, who was expert at cudgel-playing, caught with his, and returned the favour so successfully on his adversary, that he laid him sprawling at his feet, and at the same instant received a blow from behind, with the butt-end of a pistol from the other villain, which felled him to the ground, and totally deprived him of his senses.

The thief who had been knocked down, had now recovered himself; and both together fell

---

to belabouring poor Joseph with their sticks, till they were convinced they had put an end to his miserable being: they then stript him entirely naked, threw him into a ditch, and departed with their booty.

The poor wretch, who lay motionless a long time, just began to recover his senses as a stage-coach came by. The postilion hearing a man's groans, stopt his horses, and told the coachman, he was certain there was a dead man lying in the ditch; for he heard him groan. 'Go on, firrah,' says the coachman, 'we are confounded late, and have no time to look after dead men.' A Lady, who heard what the postilion said, and likewise heard the groan, called eagerly to the coachman, to stop and see what was the matter. Upon which he bid the postilion alight, and look into the ditch. He did so, and returned, That there was a man sitting upright as naked as ever he was born. 'O J---sus,' cried the Lady, 'a naked man! Dear coachman, drive on and leave him.' Upon this the gentlemen got out of the coach; and Joseph begged them to have mercy upon him; for that he had been robbed, and almost beaten to death. 'Robbed!' cries an old gentleman; 'let us make all the haste imaginable, or we shall be robbed too.' A young man, who belonged to the law, an-

## 24 THE ADVENTURES OF

swered, He wished they had passed by without taking any notice; but that now they might be proved to have been last in his company; if he should die, they might be called to some account for his murder. He therefore thought it adviseable to save the poor creature's life, for their own sakes, if possible; at least, if he died, to prevent the jury's finding that they fled for it. He was therefore of opinion, to take the man into the coach, and carry him to the next inn. The Lady insisted, That he should not come into the coach; that if they lifted him in, she would herself alight: for she had rather stay in that place to all eternity, than ride with a naked man. The coachman objected, That he could not suffer him to be taken in, unless somebody would pay a shilling for his carriage the four miles; which the two gentlemen refused to do. But the lawyer, who was afraid of some mischief happening to himself if the wretch was left behind in that condition, saying, No man could be too cautious in these matters, and that he remembered very extraordinary cases in the books, threatened the coachman, and bid him deny taking him up at his peril; for that if he died, he should be indicted for his murder; and if he lived, and brought an action against him, he would willingly take a brief in it.

These words had a sensible effect on the coachman, who was well acquainted with the person who spoke them; and the old gentleman above mentioned, thinking the naked man would afford him frequent opportunities of shewing his wit to the lady, offered to join with the company in giving a mug of beer for his fare; till partly alarmed by the threats of the one, and partly by the promises of the other, and being, perhaps, a little moved with compassion at the poor creature's condition, who stood bleeding and shivering with the cold, he at length agreed; and Joseph was now advancing to the coach, where, seeing the lady, who held the sticks of her fan before her eyes, he absolutely refused, miserable as he was, to enter, unless he was furnished with sufficient covering, to prevent giving the least offence to decency. So perfectly modest was this young man; such mighty effects had the spotless example of the amiable Pamela, and the excellent sermons of Mr Adams, wrought upon him.

Though there were several great coats about the coach, it was not easy to get over this difficulty which Joseph had started. The two gentlemen complained they were cold, and could not spare a rag; the man of wit saying, with a laugh, That charity began at



home; and the coachman, who had two great coats spread under him, refused to lend either, lest they should be made bloody: the lady's footman desired to be excused for the same reason; which the lady herself, notwithstanding her abhorrence of a naked man, approved: and it is more than probable, poor Joseph, who obstinately adhered to his modest resolution, must have perished, unless the postilion (a lad, who hath been since transported for robbing a hen-roost) had voluntarily stript off a great coat, his only garment, at the same time swearing a great oath, (for which he was rebuked by the passengers) that he would rather ride in his shirt all his life, than suffer a fellow-creature to ly in so miserable a condition.

Joseph having put on the great coat, was lifted into the coach, which now proceeded on its journey. He declared himself almost dead with cold; which gave the man of wit an occasion to ask the lady, if she could not accommodate him with a dram. She answered with some resentment, She wondered at his asking her such a question; but assured him she never tasted any such thing.

The lawyer was enquiring into the circumstances of the robbery, when the coach stopt, and one of the ruffians putting a pistol in, demanded their money of the passengers;



who readily gave it them; and the lady, in her fright, delivered up a little silver bottle, of about a half pint size, which the rogue, clapping it to his mouth, and drinking her health, declared held some of the best Nantz he had ever tasted: this the lady afterwards assured the company was the mistake of her maid; for that she had ordered her to fill the bottle with Hungary-water.

As soon as the fellows were departed, the lawyer, who had, it seems, a case of pistols in the seat of the coach, informed the company, that if it had been day-light, and he could have come at his pistols, he would not have submitted to the robbery; he likewise set forth, that he had often met highwaymen when he travelled on horseback, but none ever durst attack him; concluding, that if he had not been more afraid for the lady than for himself, he should not have now parted with his money so easily.

As wit is generally observed to love to reside in empty pockets, so the gentleman, whose ingenuity we have above remarked, as soon as he had parted with his money, began to grow wonderfully facetious. He made frequent allusions to Adam and Eve, and said many excellent things on figs and fig-leaves; which, perhaps, gave more offence to Joseph than to any other in the company.

## 88 THE ADVENTURES OF

The lawyer likewise made several very pretty jests, without departing from his profession. He said, if Joseph and the lady were alone, he would be more capable of making a conveyance to her, as his affairs were not fettered with any incumbrance; he'd warrant, he soon suffered a recovery by a writ of entry, which was the proper way to create heirs in tail; that for his own part, he would engage to make so firm a settlement in a coach, that there should be no danger of an ejection: with an inundation of the like gibberish, which he continued to vent till the coach arrived at an inn, where one servant maid only was up in readiness to attend the coachman, and furnish him with cold meat and a dram. Joseph desired to alight, and that he might have a bed prepared for him, which the maid readily promised to perform; and being a good-natured wench, and not so squeamish as the lady had been, she clapt a large faggot on the fire, and furnishing Joseph with a great coat belonging to one of the hostlers, desired him to sit down and warm himself, whilst she made his bed. The coachman, in the mean time, took an opportunity to call up a surgeon, who lived within a few doors; after which, he reminded his passengers how late they were, and after

they had taken their leave of Joseph, hurried him off as fast as he could.

The wench soon got Joseph to bed, and promised to use her interest to borrow him a shirt; but imagined, as she afterwards said, by his being so bloody, that he must be a dead man: she ran with all speed to hasten the surgeon, who was more than half dressed, apprehending that the coach had been overturned, and some gentleman or lady hurt. As soon as the wench had informed him at his window, that it was a poor foot-passenger who had been stripped of all he had, and almost murdered; he chid her for disturbing him so early, slipped off his clothes again, and very quietly returned to bed and to sleep.

Aurora now began to shew her blooming cheeks over the hills, whilst ten millions of feathered songsters, in jocund chorus, repeated odes a thousand times sweeter than those of our Laureat, and sung both the day and the song; when the master of the inn, Mr Tow-wouse, arose, and learning from his maid an account of the robbery, and the situation of his poor naked guest, he shook his head, and cried, 'Good lack a-day!' and then ordered the girl to carry him one of his own shirts.

Mrs Tow-wouse was just awake, and had stretched out her arms in vain to fold her

departed husband, when the maid entered the room. 'Who's there? Betty?' 'Yes, Madam.' 'Where's your master?' 'He's without, Madam; he hath sent me for a shirt to lend a poor naked man, who hath been robbed and murdered.' 'Touch one if you dare, you slut,' said Mrs Tow-wouse: 'your master is a pretty sort of a man to take in naked vagabonds, and cloath them with his own cloaths. I shall have no such doings.—If you offer to touch any thing, I'll throw the chamber-pot at your head. Go, send your master to me.' 'Yes, Madam,' answered Betty. As soon as he came in, she thus began: 'What the devil do you mean by this, Mr Tow-wouse? Am I to buy shirts to lend to a set of scabby rascals?' 'My dear,' said Mr Tow-wouse, 'this is a poor wretch.' 'Yes,' says she, 'I know it is a poor wretch; but what the devil have we to do with poor wretches? The law makes us provide for too many already. We shall have thirty or forty poor wretches in red coats shortly.' 'My dear,' cries Tow-wouse, 'this man hath been robbed of all he hath.' 'Well then,' says she, 'where's his money to pay his reckoning? Why doth not such a fellow go to an ale-house? I shall send him packing as soon as I am up, I assure you.' 'My dear,' said he,

' common charity won't suffer you to do  
 ' that.' ' Common charity, a f—t !' says she,  
 ' common charity teaches us to provide for  
 ' ourselves, and our families; and I and mine  
 ' won't be ruined by your charity, I assure  
 ' you.' ' Well,' says he, ' my dear, do as  
 ' you will when you are up; you know I  
 ' never contradict you.' ' No,' says she, ' if  
 ' the devil was to contradict me, I would  
 ' make the house too hot to hold him.'

With such like discourses they consumed  
 near half an hour, whilst Betty provided a  
 shirt from the hostler, who was one of her  
 sweethearts, and put it on poor Joseph. The  
 surgeon had likewise at last visited him, and  
 washed and dressed his wounds, and was now  
 come to acquaint Mr Tow-wouse, that his  
 guest was in such extreme danger of his life,  
 that he scarce saw any hopes of his reco-  
 very.—' Here's a pretty kettle of fish,' cries  
 Mrs Tow-wouse, ' you have brought upon  
 ' us ! We are like to have a funeral at our  
 ' own expence.' Tow-wouse, (who, notwith-  
 standing his charity, would have given his  
 vote as freely as ever he did at an election,  
 that any other house in the kingdom should  
 have quiet possession of his guest) answered,  
 ' My dear, I am not to blame: he was  
 ' brought hither by the stage-coach; and  
 ' Betty had put him to bed before I was stir-  
 ' ring.' ' I'll Betty her,' says she—At which,

92 THE ADVENTURES OF

with half her garments on, the other half under her arm, she sallied out in quest of the unfortunate Betty, whilst Tow-wouse and the surgeon went to pay a visit to poor Joseph, and enquire into the circumstances of this melancholy affair.

C H A P XIII.

*What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and Mr Barnabas the parson of the parish.*

AS soon as Joseph had communicated a particular history of the robbery, together with a short account of himself and his intended journey, he asked the surgeon, if he apprehended him to be in any danger: to which the surgeon very honestly answered, 'He feared he was, for that his pulse was very exalted and feverish, and if his fever should prove more than symptomatic, it would be impossible to save him.' Joseph, fetching a deep sigh, cried, 'Poor Fanny, I would I could have lived to see thee! but God's will be done.'

The surgeon then advised him, if he had any worldly affairs to settle, that he would do it as soon as possible; for though he hop'd he might recover, yet he thought himself



obliged to acquaint him he was in great danger; and if the malign concoction of his humours should cause a suscitation of his fever, he might soon grow delirious and incapable to make his will. Joseph answered, 'That it was impossible for any creature in the universe to be in a poorer condition than himself: for since the robbery, he had not one thing of any kind whatever, which he could call his own. I had,' said he; 'a poor little piece of gold, which they took away, that would have been a comfort to me in all my afflictions; but surely, Fanny; I want nothing to remind me of thee. I have thy dear image in my heart, and no villain can ever tear it thence.'

Joseph desired paper and pens to write a letter, but they were refused him; and he was advised to use all his endeavours to compose himself. They then left him; and Mr Tow-wouse sent to a clergyman to come and administer his good offices to the soul of poor Joseph, since the surgeon despaired of making any successful applications to his body.

Mr Barnabas (for that was the clergyman's name) came as soon as sent for; and having first drank a dish of tea with the landlady, and afterwards a bowl of punch with the landlord, he walked up to the room

where Joseph lay: but, finding him asleep, returned to take the other sneaker; which when he had finished, he again crept softly up to the chamber-door, and having opened it, heard the sick man talking to himself in the following manner:

‘ O most adorable Pamela! most virtuous  
 ‘ sister! whose example alone could enable  
 ‘ me to withstand all the temptations of  
 ‘ riches and beauty, and to preserve my vir-  
 ‘ tue pure and chaste, for the arms of my  
 ‘ dear Fanny, if it had pleased Heaven that  
 ‘ I should ever have come into them. What  
 ‘ riches, or honours, or pleasures can make  
 ‘ us amends for the loss of innocence? Doth  
 ‘ not that alone afford us more consolation,  
 ‘ than all worldly acquisitions? What but  
 ‘ innocence and virtue could give any com-  
 ‘ fort to such a miserable wretch as I am?  
 ‘ Yet these can make me prefer this sick and  
 ‘ painful bed to all the pleasures I should  
 ‘ have found in my lady’s. These can make  
 ‘ me face death without fear; and though  
 ‘ I love my Fanny more than ever man lo-  
 ‘ ved a woman, these can teach me to resign  
 ‘ myself to the divine will without repining.  
 ‘ O, thou delightful charming creature! if  
 ‘ Heaven had indulged thee to my arms, the  
 ‘ poorest, humblest state, would have been a  
 ‘ paradise; I could have lived with thee in

‘ the lowest cottage, without envying the  
 ‘ palaces, the dainties, or the riches of any  
 ‘ man breathing. But I must leave thee,  
 ‘ leave thee for ever, my dearest angel! I  
 ‘ must think of another world; and I hear-  
 ‘ tily pray thou may’st meet comfort in  
 ‘ this.’——Barnabas thought he had heard  
 enough; so down stairs he went, and told  
 Tow-wouse he could do his guest no service,  
 for that he was very light-headed, and had  
 uttered nothing but a rhapsody of nonsense  
 all the time he staid in the room.

The surgeon returned in the afternoon,  
 and found his patient in a higher fever, as  
 he said, than when he left him, though not  
 delirious: for notwithstanding Mr Barna-  
 bas’s opinion, he had not been once out of  
 his senses since his arrival at the inn.

Mr Barnabas was again sent for, and with  
 much difficulty prevailed on to make ano-  
 ther visit. As soon as he entered the room,  
 he told Joseph, ‘ He was come to pray by  
 ‘ him, and to prepare him for another world;  
 ‘ in the first place therefore, he hoped he had  
 ‘ repented of all his sins.’ Joseph answered,  
 ‘ He hoped he had; but there was one thing  
 ‘ which he knew not whether he should call  
 ‘ a sin; if it was, he feared he should die in  
 ‘ the commission of it; and that was the re-  
 ‘ gret of parting with a young woman,

## 96 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ whom he loved as tenderly as he did his  
‘ heart-strings.’ Barnabas bade him be as-  
‘ fured, ‘ that any repining at the divine will  
‘ was one of the greatest sins he could com-  
‘ mit; that he ought to forget all carnal af-  
‘ fections, and think of better things.’ Jo-  
‘ seph said, ‘ That neither in this world nor  
‘ the next, he could forget his Fanny; and  
‘ that the thought, however grievous, of  
‘ parting from her for ever, was not half so  
‘ tormenting, as the fear of what she would  
‘ suffer, when she knew his misfortune.’ Bar-  
‘ nabas said, ‘ That such fears argued a dif-  
‘ fidence and despondence very criminal;  
‘ that he must divest himself of all human  
‘ passions, and fix his heart above.’ Joseph  
‘ answered, ‘ That was what he desired to  
‘ do, and should be obliged to him if he  
‘ would enable him to accomplish it.’ Bar-  
‘ nabas replied, ‘ That must be done by grace.’  
Joseph besought him to discover how he  
‘ might attain it. Barnabas answered, ‘ By  
‘ prayer and faith.’ He then question-  
‘ ed him concerning his forgiveness of the  
‘ thieves. Joseph answered, ‘ He feared that  
‘ was more than he could do: for nothing  
‘ would give him more pleasure than to hear  
‘ they were taken.’ ‘ That,’ cries Barna-  
‘ bas, ‘ is for the sake of justice.’ ‘ Yes,’ said  
‘ Joseph; ‘ but if I was to met them again, I

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 97

' am afraid I should attack them, and kill  
' them too if I could.' ' Doubtless,' an-  
swered Barnabas, ' it is lawful to kill a  
' thief: but can you say, you forgive them  
' as a Christian ought?' Joseph desired to  
know what that forgiveness was. ' That is,'  
answered Barnabas, ' to forgive them as—  
' as—it is to forgive them as — in short, it  
' is to forgive them as a Christian.' Joseph  
replied, ' He forgave them as much as he  
' could.' ' Well, well,' said Barnabas, ' that  
' will do.' He then demanded of him, ' if  
' he remembered any more sins unrepented  
' of; and if he did, he desired him to make  
' haste and repent of them as fast as he  
' could; that they might repeat over a few  
' prayers together.' Joseph answered, ' He  
' could not recollect any great crimes he had  
' been guilty of, and that those he had com-  
' mitted he was sincerely sorry for.' Bar-  
nabas said, that was enough, and then pro-  
ceeded to prayer with all the expedition he  
was master of; some company then waiting  
for him below in the parlour, where the in-  
gredients for punch were all in readiness:  
but no one would squeeze the oranges till he  
came.

Joseph complained he was dry, and de-  
sired a little tea; which Barnabas reported  
to Mrs Tow-wouse, who answered, ' She

98 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ had just done drinking it, and could not be sloping all day;’ but ordered Betty to carry him up some small beer.

Betty obeyed her mistress’s commands; but Joseph, as soon as he had ~~tasted~~ it, said, he feared it would encrease his fever, and that he longed very much for tea. To which the good-natur’d Betty answered, he should have tea, if there was any in the land; she accordingly went and bought him some herself, and attended him with it; where we will leave her and Joseph together for some time, to entertain the reader with other matters.

C H A P. XIV.

*Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.*

**I**T was now the dusk of the evening, when a grave person rode into the inn, and committing his horse to the hostler, went directly to the kitchen, and having called for a pipe of tobacco, took his place by the fire-side; where several persons were likewise assembled.

The discourse ran altogether on the robbery which was committed the night before, and on the poor wretch, who lay above in the dreadful condition in which we have al-



ready seen him. Mrs Tow-wouse said, 'She  
 ' wondered what the devil Tom Whipwell  
 ' meant by bringing such guests to her house  
 ' when there were so many ale-houses on the  
 ' road proper for their reception. But she  
 ' assured him, if he died the parish should be  
 ' at the expence of the funeral.' She added,  
 ' Nothing would serve the fellow's turn but  
 ' tea, she would assure him.' Betty, who  
 was just returned from her charitable office,  
 answered, she believed he was a gentleman,  
 for she never saw a finer skin in her life.  
 ' Pox on his skin!' replied Mrs Tow-wouse,  
 ' I suppose that is all we are like to have for  
 ' the reckoning. I desire no such gentleman  
 ' should ever call at the Dragon,' (which, it  
 seems, was the sign of the inn.)

The gentleman lately arrived discovered a  
 great deal of emotion at the distress of this  
 poor creature, whom he observed to be fallen  
 not into the most compassionate hands. And  
 indeed, if Mrs Tow-wouse had given no ut-  
 terance to the sweetness of her temper, Na-  
 ture had taken such pains in her countenance,  
 that Hogarth himself never gave more ex-  
 pression to a picture.

Her person was short, thin and crooked.  
 Her forehead projected in the middle, and  
 thence descended in a declivity to the top of  
 her nose, which was sharp and red, and would

have hung over her lips, had not Nature turned up the end of it. Her lips were two bits of skin, which, whenever she spoke, she drew together in a purse. Her chin was peaked; and at the upper-end of that skin, which composed her cheeks, stood two bones, that almost hid a pair of small red eyes: add to this a voice most wonderfully adapted to the sentiments it was to convey, being both loud and hoarse.

It is not easy to say, whether the gentleman had conceived a greater dislike for his landlady, or compassion for her unhappy guest. He enquired very earnestly of the surgeon, who was now come into the kitchen, whether he had any hopes of his recovery? he begged him to use all possible means towards it, telling him, ‘it was the duty of men of all professions, to apply their skill gratis for the relief of the poor and necessitous. The surgeon answered, ‘he should take proper care: but he defied all the surgeons in London to do him any good.’ ‘Pray, Sir,’ said the gentleman, ‘what are his wounds?’ ‘Why, do you know any thing of wounds?’ said the surgeon, (winking upon Mrs Tow-wouse.) ‘Sir, I have a small smattering in surgery,’ answered the gentleman. ‘A smattering, — ho, ho,

ho!’ said the surgeon, ‘I believe it is a  
‘ smattering indeed.’

The company were all attentive, expecting  
to hear the doctor, who was what they call  
a dry fellow, expose the gentleman.

He began therefore with an air of triumph:—  
‘I suppose, Sir, you have travelled.’ ‘No,  
‘ really, Sir,’ said the gentleman. ‘Ho!  
‘ then you have practised in the hospitals  
‘ perhaps.’ ‘No, Sir.’ ‘Hum! not that  
‘ neither? Whence, Sir, then, if I may be  
‘ so bold to enquire, have you got your  
‘ knowledge in surgery?’ ‘Sir,’ answered  
the gentleman, ‘I do not pretend to much;  
‘ but the little I know, I have from books.’  
‘Books!’ cries the doctor,—‘What, I sup-  
‘ pose you have read Galen and Hippocrates!’  
‘No, Sir,’ said the gentleman. ‘How, you  
‘ understand surgery,’ answers the Doctor,  
‘ and not read Galen and Hippocrates!’  
‘Sir,’ cries the other, ‘I believe there are  
‘ many surgeons who have never read these  
‘ authors.’ ‘I believe so too,’ says the doc-  
tor, ‘more shame for them: but thanks to  
‘ my education I have them by heart, and  
‘ very seldom go without them both in my  
‘ pocket.’ ‘They are pretty large books,’  
said the gentleman. ‘Aye,’ said the doctor,  
‘I believe I know how large they are better  
‘ than you.’ At which he fell a winking,  
and the whole company burst into a laugh.

The Doctor pursuing his triumph, asked the gentleman, if he did not understand phyfic as well as furgery.' 'Rather better,' answered the gentleman. 'Ay, like enough,' cries the Doctor with a wink. 'Why, I know a little of phyfic too.' 'I wish I knew half so much,' said Tow-wouse, 'I'd never wear an apron again.' 'Why, I believe, landlord,' cries the Doctor, 'there are few men, though I say it, within twelve miles of the place, that handle a fever better. *Veniente accurrite morbo*: that is my method. I suppose, brother, you understand Latin?' 'A little,' says the gentleman. 'Ay, and Greek now I'll warrant you: *Ton dapomiboninos polustsboio Thalasses*. But I have almost forgot these things; I could have repeated Homer by heart once.' 'Ifsags, the gentleman has caught a traitor,' says Mrs Tow-wouse; at which they all fell a-laughing.

The gentleman, who had not the least affection for joking, very contentedly suffered the Doctor to enjoy his victory; which he did with no small satisfaction: and having sufficiently sounded his depth, told him, he was thoroughly convinced of his great learning and abilities; and that he would be obliged to him, if he would let him know his opinion of his patient's case above stairs. 'Sir,' says the Doctor, 'his case is that of a

' dead man. The contusion on his head has  
 ' perforated the internal membrane of the  
 ' occiput, and divelicated that radical small  
 ' minute invisible nerve, which coheres to  
 ' the pericranium; and this was attended  
 ' with a fever at first symptomatic, then  
 ' pneumatic; and he is at length grown  
 ' delirious, or delinious, as the vulgar express  
 ' it.'

He was proceeding in this learned manner,  
 when a mighty noise interrupted him. Some  
 young fellows in the neighbourhood had tak-  
 en one of the thieves, and were bringing  
 him into the inn. Betty ran up stairs with  
 this news to Joseph; who begged they might  
 search for a little piece of broken gold, which  
 had a ribband tied to it, and which he could  
 swear to amongst all the hoards of the richest  
 men in the universe.

Notwithstanding the fellow's persisting in  
 his innocence, the mob were very busy in  
 searching him, and presently, among other  
 things, pulled out the piece of gold just men-  
 tioned; which Betty no sooner saw, than she  
 laid violent hands on it, and conveyed it up  
 to Joseph, who received it with raptures of  
 joy, and hugging it in his bosom, declared,  
 he could now die contented.

Within a few minutes afterwards, came in  
 some other fellows, with a bundle which  
 they had found in a ditch, and which was



indeed the cloaths which had been stripped off from Joseph, and the other things they had taken from him.

The gentleman no sooner saw the coat, than he declared he knew the livery; and if it had been taken from the poor creature above stairs, desired he might see him; for that he was very well acquainted with the family to whom that livery belonged.

He was accordingly conducted up by Betty; but what, reader, was the surprise on both sides, when he saw Joseph was the person in bed; and when Joseph discovered the face of his good friend Mr Abraham Adams!

It would be impertinent to insert a discourse which chiefly turned on the relation of matters already well known to the reader: for as soon as the curate had satisfied Joseph concerning the perfect health of his Fanny, he was on his side very inquisitive into all the particulars which had produced this unfortunate accident.

To return therefore to the kitchen, where a great variety of company were now assembled from all the rooms of the house, as well as the neighbourhood; so much delight do men take in contemplating the countenance of a thief.

Mr Tow-wouse began to rub his hands



with pleasure, at seeing so large an assembly; who would, he hoped, shortly adjourn into several apartments, in order to discourse over the robbery, and drink a health to all honest men. But Mrs Tow-wouse, whose misfortune it was commonly to see things a little perversely, began to rail at those who brought the fellow into her house; telling her husband, they were very likely to thrive, who kept a house of entertainment for beggars and thieves.

The mob had now finished their search; and could find nothing about the captive likely to prove any evidence: for as to the cloaths, though the mob were very well satisfied with that proof; yet as the surgeon observed, they could not convict him, because they were not found in his custody; to which Barnabas agreed, and added, that these were *bona waviata*, and belonged to the lord of the manor.

‘How,’ says the surgeon, ‘do you say these goods belong to the lord of the manor?’ ‘I do,’ cried Barnabas. ‘Then I deny it,’ says the surgeon. ‘What can the lord of the manor have to do in the case? will any one attempt to persuade me that what a man finds is not his own!’ ‘I have heard,’ says an old fellow in the corner, ‘justice Wise-

‘one say, that if every man had his  
 ‘right, whatever is found belongs to the  
 ‘King of London.’ ‘That may be true,’  
 says Barnabas, ‘in some sense: for the law  
 ‘makes a difference between things stolen  
 ‘and things found; for a thing may be sto-  
 ‘len that never is found; and a thing may  
 ‘be found that never was stolen. Now  
 ‘goods that are both stolen and found are  
 ‘*waviata*; and they belong to the lord of  
 ‘the manor.’ ‘So the lord of the manor  
 ‘is the receiver of stolen goods,’ says the  
 Doctor; at which there was an universal  
 laugh, being first begun by himself.

While the prisoner, by persisting in his  
 innocence, had almost (as there was no evi-  
 dence against him) brought over Barnabas,  
 the surgeon, Tow-wouse, and several others  
 to his side; Betty informed them that they  
 had overlooked a little piece of gold, which  
 she had carried up to the man in bed; and  
 which he offered to swear to amongst a mil-  
 lion, aye, amongst ten thousand. This imme-  
 diately turned the scale against the prisoner;  
 and every one now concluded him guilty.  
 It was resolved, therefore, to keep him se-  
 cured that night, and early in the morning to  
 carry him before a justice.

## C H A P XV.

*Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little mollified: and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thief: with a dissertation accounting for their zeal and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.*

BETTY told her mistress, she believed the man in bed was a greater man than they took him for: for besides the extreme whiteness of his skin, and the softness of his hands, she observed a very great familiarity between the gentleman and him; and added, she was certain they were intimate acquaintance, if not relations.

This somewhat abated the severity of Mrs Tow-wouse's countenance. She said, God forbid she should not discharge the duty of a Christian, since the poor gentleman was brought to her house. She had a natural antipathy to vagabonds; but could pity the misfortunes of a Christian as soon as another. Tow-wouse said, 'If the traveller be a gentleman, though he hath no money about him now, we shall most likely be paid hereafter, so you may begin to score whenever you will.' Mrs Tow-wouse answered, 'Hold your simple tongue, and

‘ don’t instruct me in my business. I am  
 ‘ sure I am sorry for the gentleman’s mis-  
 ‘ fortune with all my heart; and I hope the  
 ‘ villain who hath used him so barbarously  
 ‘ will be hanged. Betty, go see what he  
 ‘ wants. God forbid he should want any  
 ‘ thing in my house.’

Barnabas and the surgeon went up to Joseph, to satisfy themselves concerning the piece of gold. Joseph was with difficulty prevailed upon to shew it them; but would by no intreaties be brought to deliver it out of his own possession. He however attested this to be the same which had been taken from him; and Betty was ready to swear to the finding it on the thief.

The only difficulty that remained, was how to produce this gold before the justice: for as to carrying Joseph himself, it seemed impossible; nor was there any great likelihood of obtaining it from him; for he had fastened it with a ribband to his arm, and solemnly vowed, that nothing but irresistible force should ever separate them; in which resolution, Mr Adams, clenching a fist rather less than the knuckle of an ox, declared he would support him.

A dispute arose on this occasion concerning evidence, not very necessary to be related here; after which the surgeon dressed Mr

Joseph's head; still persisting in the imminent danger in which his patient lay; but concluding with a very important look, that he began to have some hopes; that he should send him a fanative soporiferous draught, and would see him in the morning. After which Barnabas and he departed, and left Mr Joseph and Mr Adams together.

Adams informed Joseph of the occasion of this journey which he was making to London, namely, to publish three volumes of sermons; being encouraged, as he said, by an advertisement lately set forth by a society of booksellers, who proposed to purchase any copies offered to them at a price to be settled by two persons; but tho' he imagined he should get a considerable sum of money on this occasion, which his family were in urgent need of, he protested he would not leave Joseph in his present condition: finally, he told him he had nine shillings and threepence halfpenny in his pocket, which he was welcome to use as he pleased.

This goodness of parson Adams brought tears into Joseph's eyes; he declared he had now a second reason to desire life, that he might shew his gratitude to such a friend. Adams bade him be chearful, for that he plainly saw the surgeon, besides his ignorance, desired to make a merit of curing him,

though the wounds in his head, he perceived, were by no means dangerous; that he was convinced he had no fever, and doubted not but he would be able to travel in a day or two.

These words infused a spirit into Joseph; he said, he found himself very sore from the bruises; but had no reason to think any of his bones injured, or that he had received any harm in his inside; unless that he felt something very odd in his stomach; but he knew not whether that might not arise from not having eaten one morsel for above twenty-four hours. Being then asked if he had any inclination to eat, he answered in the affirmative. Then Parson Adams desired him to name what he had the greatest fancy for; whether a poached egg, or chicken broth: he answered, he could eat both very well; but that he seemed to have the greatest appetite for a piece of boiled beef and cabbage.

Adams was pleased with so perfect a confirmation that he had not the least fever; but advised him to a lighter diet, for that evening. He accordingly ate either a rabbit, or a fowl, I never could with any tolerable certainty discover which: after this, he was, by Mrs Tow-ouse's order, conveyed into a better bed, and equipped with one of her husband's shirts.



In the morning early, Barnabas and the surgeon came to the inn, in order to see the thief conveyed before the justice. They had consumed the whole night in debating what measures they should take to produce the piece of gold in evidence against him: for they were both extremely zealous in the business, though neither of them were in the least interested in the prosecution; neither of them had ever received any private injury from the fellow, nor had either of them ever been suspected of loving the public well enough, to give them a sermon or a dose of physic for nothing.

To help our reader therefore as much as possible to account for this zeal, we must inform him, that, as this parish was so unfortunate as to have no lawyer in it, there had been a constant contention between the two doctors, spiritual and physical, concerning their abilities in a science, in which, as neither of them professed it, they had equal pretensions to dispute each other's opinions. These disputes were carried on with great contempt on both sides, and had almost divided the parish; Mr Tow-wouse and one half of the neighbours inclined to the surgeon, and Mrs Tow-wouse with the other half to the parson. The surgeon drew his knowledge from those inestimable foun-

tains, called the Attorney's Pocket companion, and Mr Jacob's Law-tables; Barnabas trusted entirely to Wood's institutes. It happened on this occasion, as was pretty frequently the case, that these two learned men differed about the sufficiency of evidence: the doctor being of opinion, that the maid's oath would convict the prisoner without producing the gold; the parson *à contra, totis viribus*. To display their parts therefore before the justice and the parish, was the sole motive which we can discover to this zeal, which both of them pretended to have for public justice.

O Vanity! how little is thy force acknowledged, or thy operations discerned! How wantonly dost thou deceive mankind under different disguises! Sometimes thou dost wear the face of pity, sometimes of generosity: nay, thou hast the assurance even to put on those glorious ornaments which belong only to heroic virtue. Thou odious deformed monster! whom priests have railed at, philosophers despised, and poets ridiculed: is there a wretch so abandoned as to own thee for an acquaintance in public? yet how few will refuse to enjoy thee in private! nay thou art the pursuit of most men through their lives. The greatest villainies are daily practised to please thee: nor is the meanest thief below, or the greatest hero above thy

notice. Thy embraces are often the sole alm and sole reward of the private robbery, and the plundered province. It is to pamper up thee, thou harlot, that we attempt to withdraw from others what we do not want, or to withhold from them what they do. All our passions are thy slaves. Avarice itself is often no more than thy handmaid, and even Lust thy pimp. The bully Fear, like a coward, flies before thee, and Joy and Grief hide their heads in thy presence.

I know thou wilt think, that whilst I abuse thee, I court thee; and that thy love hath inspired me to write this sarcastical panegyric on thee: but thou art deceived, I value thee not of a farthing; nor will it give me any pain, if thou shouldst prevail on the reader to censure this digression as arrant nonsense: for know, to thy confusion, that I have introduced thee for no other purpose than to lengthen out a short chapter; and so I return to my history.

## C H A P. XVI.

*The escape of the thief. Mr Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of parson Adams to parson Barnabas.*

**B**ARNABAS and the surgeon being returned, as we have said, to the inn, in order to convey the thief before the justice, were greatly concerned to find a small accident had happened, which somewhat disconcerted them; and this was no other than the thief's escape, who had modestly withdrawn himself by night, declining all ostentation, and not chusing, in imitation of some great men, to distinguish himself at the expence of being pointed at.

When the company had retired the evening before, the thief was detained in a room where the constable, and one of the young fellows who took him, were planted as his guard. About the second watch, a general complaint of drowth was made both by the prisoner and his keepers; among whom it was at last agreed, that the constable should remain on duty, and the young fellow call up the tapster; in which disposition the latter apprehended not the least danger, as the constable was well armed, and could besides

easily summon him back to his assistance, if the prisoner made the least attempt to gain his liberty.

The young fellow had not long left the room, before it came into the constable's head, that the prisoner might leap on him by surprise, and thereby preventing him of the use of his weapons, especially the long staff in which he chiefly confided, might reduce the success of a struggle to an equal chance. He wisely therefore, to prevent this inconvenience, slipped out of the room himself, and locked the door, waiting without with his staff in his hand, ready lifted to fell the unhappy prisoner, if by ill fortune he should attempt to break out.

But human life, as hath been discovered by some great man or other, (for I would by no means be understood to affect the honour of making any such discovery) very much resembles a game at Chess: for as in the latter, while a gamester is too attentive to secure himself very strongly on one side the board, he is apt to leave an unguarded opening on the other; so doth it often happen in life; and so did it happen on this occasion: for whilst the cautious constable with such wonderful sagacity had possessed himself of the door, he most unhappily forgot the window.

## 116 THE ADVENTURES OF

The thief, who plyed on the other side, no sooner perceived this opening, than he began to move that way; and finding the passage easy, he took with him the young fellow's hat; and without any ceremony, stepped into the street, and made the best of his way.

The young fellow returning with a double mug of strong beer, was a little surpris'd to find the constable at the door; but much more so, when, the door being opened, he perceived the prisoner had made his escape, and which way. He threw down the beer, and without uttering any thing to the constable, except a hearty curse or two, he nimbly leaped out at the window, and went again in pursuit of his prey; being very unwilling to lose the reward which he had assur'd himself of.

The constable hath not been discharged of suspicion on this account: it hath been said, that not being concerned in the taking the thief, he could not have been entitl'd to any part of the reward, if he had been convicted; that the thief had several guineas in his pocket; that it was very unlikely he should have been guilty of such an oversight; that his pretence for leaving the room was absurd; that it was his constant maxim, that a wise man never refus'd money on any conditions;



that at every election he always had sold his vote to both parties, &c.

But notwithstanding these and many other such allegations, I am sufficiently convinced of his innocence; having been positively assured of it, by those who received their informations from his own mouth; which, in the opinion of some moderns, is the best and indeed only evidence.

All the family were now up, and with many others assembled in the kitchen, where Mr Tow-wouse was in some tribulation; the surgeon having declared, that by law he was liable to be indicted for the thief's escape, as it was out of his house: he was a little comforted however by Mr Barnabas's opinion, that as the escape was by night, the indictment would not ly.

Mrs Tow-wouse delivered herself in the following words: 'Sure never was such a fool as my husband! would any other person living have left a man in the custody of such a drunken drowsy blockhead as Tom Suckbribe!' (which was the constable's name:) and if he could be indicted without any harm to his wife and children, I should be glad of it.' (Then the bell rung in Joseph's room.) 'Why, Betty, John, Chamberlain, where the devil are you all? Have you no ears, or no conscience, not to tend

‘ the sick better?—See what the gentle-  
 ‘ man wants; why don’t you go yourself,  
 ‘ Mr Tow-wouse? but any one may die for  
 ‘ you; you have no more feeling than a  
 ‘ deal-board. If a man lived a fortnight in  
 ‘ your house without spending a penny, you  
 ‘ would never put him in mind of it. See  
 ‘ whether he drinks tea or coffee for break-  
 ‘ fast.’ ‘ Yes, my dear,’ cried Tow-wouse.  
 She then asked the doctor and Mr Barnabas  
 what morning’s draught they chose, who  
 answered they had a pot of cyder-and at the  
 fire; which we will leave them merry over,  
 and return to Joseph.

He had rose pretty early this morning:  
 but though his wounds were far from threat-  
 ening any danger, he was so sore with the  
 bruises, that it was impossible for him to  
 think of undertaking a journey yet; Mr  
 Adams therefore, whose stock was visibly de-  
 creased with the expences of supper and  
 breakfast, and which could not survive that  
 day’s scoring, began to consider how it was  
 possible to recruit it. At last he cried, ‘ He  
 ‘ had luckily hit on a sure method; and  
 ‘ though it would oblige him to return him-  
 ‘ self home together with Joseph, it mattered  
 ‘ not much.’ He then sent for Tow-wouse,  
 and taking him into another room, told him,  
 ‘ He wanted to borrow three guineas, for

‘ which he would put ample security into  
 ‘ his hands.’ Tow-wouse, who expected a  
 watch, or ring, or something of double the  
 value, answered, ‘ He believed he could fur-  
 ‘ nish him.’ Upon which Adams, pointing  
 to his saddle-bag, told him, with a face and  
 voice full of solemnity, ‘ that there were in  
 ‘ that bag no less than nine volumes of ms-  
 ‘ nuscript sermons, as well worth a hundred  
 ‘ pound as a shilling was worth twelvecence,  
 ‘ and that he would deposit one of the vo-  
 ‘ lumes in his hands by way of pledge; not  
 ‘ doubting but that he would have the ho-  
 ‘ nesty to return it on his repayment of the  
 ‘ money; for otherwise he would be a very  
 ‘ great loser, seeing that every volume would  
 ‘ at least bring him ten pounds, as he had  
 ‘ been informed by a neighbouring clergy-  
 ‘ man in the country: for,’ said he, ‘ as to  
 ‘ my own part, having never yet dealt in  
 ‘ printing, I do not pretend to ascertain the  
 ‘ exact value of such things.’

Tow-wouse, who was a little surpris'd at  
 the pawn, said (and not without some truth)  
 ‘ that he was no judge of the price of such  
 ‘ kind of goods: and as for money, he really  
 ‘ was very short.’ Adams answered, ‘ Cer-  
 ‘ tainly he would not scruple to lend him  
 ‘ three guineas on what was undoubtedly  
 ‘ worth at least ten.’ The landlord replied,

‘ he did not believe he had so much money  
 ‘ in the house, and besides he was to make up  
 ‘ a sum. He was very confident the books  
 ‘ were of much higher value, and heartily  
 ‘ sorry it did not suit him.’ He then cried  
 out, ‘ Coming, Sir!’ though nobody called; and ran down stairs without any fear of breaking his neck.

Poor Adams was extremely dejected at this disappointment, nor knew he what farther stratagem to try. He immediately applied to his pipe, his constant friend and comfort in his afflictions; and leaning over the rails he devoted himself to meditation, assisted by the inspiring fumes of tobacco.

He had on a night-cap drawn over his wig, and a short great coat, which half covered his cassock; a dress which, added to something comical enough in his countenance, composed a figure likely to attract the eyes of those who were not over-given to observation.

Whilst he was smoaking his pipe in this posture, a coach and six, with a numerous attendance, drove into the inn. There alighted from the coach a young fellow and a brace of pointers, after which another young fellow leapt from the box, and shook the former by the hand; and both, together with the dogs, were instantly conducted by

Mr Tow-wouse into an apartment; whither as they passed, they entertained themselves with the following short facetious dialogue:

‘ You are a pretty fellow for a coachman, Jack!’ says he from the coach; ‘ you had almost overturned us just now.’ ‘ Pox take you,’ says the coachman, ‘ if I had only broke your neck, it would have been saving somebody else the trouble: but I should have been sorry for the pointers.’ ‘ Why, you son of a b——,’ answered the other, ‘ if nobody should shoot better than you, the pointers would be of no use.’ ‘ D——n me,’ says the coachman, ‘ I will shoot with you five guineas a shot.’ You be hanged,’ says the other, ‘ for five guineas you shall shoot at my a——’ ‘ Done,’ says the coachman, ‘ I’ll pepper you better than ever you was pepper’d by Jenny Bouncer.’ ‘ Pepper your grandmother,’ says the other, ‘ here’s Tow-wouse will let you shoot at him for a shilling a-time.’ ‘ I know his Honour better,’ cries Tow-wouse, ‘ I never saw a surer shot at a partridge. Every man misses now and then; but if I could shoot half as well as his Honour, I would desire no better livelihood than I could get by my gun.’ ‘ Pox on you,’ said the coachman, ‘ you demolish more game now than your head’s worth. There’s a bitch, Tow-

‘ woufe, by G—, ſhe never blinked \* a bird  
 ‘ in her life.’ ‘ I have a puppy not a year  
 ‘ old ſhall hunt with her for a hundred,’  
 cries the other gentleman. ‘ Done,’ ſays the  
 coachman, ‘ but you will be poked before  
 ‘ you make the bett. If you have a mind  
 ‘ for a bett,’ cries the coachman, ‘ I will  
 ‘ match my ſpotted dog with your white  
 ‘ bitch for a hundred, play or pay.’ ‘ Done,’  
 ‘ ſays the other, ‘ and I’ll run Baldface  
 ‘ againſt Slouch with you for another.’  
 ‘ No,’ cries he from the box, ‘ but I’ll ven-  
 ‘ ture Miſs Jenny againſt Baldface or Han-  
 ‘ nibal either.’ ‘ Go to the devil,’ cries he  
 from the coach, ‘ I will make every bett  
 ‘ your own way, to be ſure ! I will match  
 ‘ Hannibal with Slouch for a thouſand, if  
 ‘ you dare, and I ſay done firſt.’

They were now arrived, and the reader  
 will be very contented to leave them, and re-  
 pair to the kitchen, where Barnabas, the  
 ſurgeon, and an exciſeman were ſmoking  
 their pipes over ſome cyder-and, and where  
 the ſervants, who attended the two noble  
 gentlemen we have juſt ſeen alight, were now  
 arrived.

‘ Tom,’ cries one of the footmen, ‘ there’s  
 ‘ Parſon Adams ſmoking his pipe in the  
 ‘ gallery.’ ‘ Yes,’ ſays Tom, ‘ I pulled off

\* To blink, is a term uſed to ſignify the dog’s  
 paſſing by a bird without pointing at it.



‘ my hat to him, and the Parson spoke to me.’

‘ Is the gentleman a clergyman then ?’ says Barnabas, (for his cassock had been tied up when he first arrived.) ‘ Yes, Sir,’ answered the footman, ‘ and one there be but few like.’ ‘ Aye,’ said Barnabas, ‘ if I had known it sooner, I should have desired his company; I would always shew a proper respect for the cloth; but what say you? Doctor, shall we adjourn into a room, and invite him to take part of a bowl of punch?’

This proposal was immediately agreed to and executed; and Parson Adams accepting the invitation, much civility passed between the two clergymen, who both declared the great honour they had for the cloth. They had not been long together, before they entered into a discourse on small tithes, which continued a full hour, without the doctor or exciseman’s having one opportunity to offer a word.

It was then proposed to begin a general conversation, and the exciseman opened on foreign affairs; but a word unluckily dropping from one of them introduced a dissertation on the hardships suffered by the inferior clergy; which, after a long duration, concluded with bringing the nine volumes of sermons on the carpet.

Barnabas greatly discouraged poor Adams; he said, the age was so wicked, that nobody read sermons: ‘ Would you think it, Mr Adams,’ said he, ‘ I once intended to print a volume of sermons myself, and they had the approbation of two or three bishops; but what do you think a bookseller offered me?’ Twelve guineas, perhaps,’ cried Adams. ‘ Not twelve pence, I assure you,’ answered Barnabas; ‘ nay the dog refused me a Concordance in exchange.—At last I offered to give him the printing them, for the sake of dedicating them to that very gentleman who just now drove his own coach into the inn; and I assure you he had the impudence to refuse my offer: by which means I lost a good living, that was afterwards given away in exchange for a pointer, to one who—but I will not say any thing against the cloth. So you may guess, Mr Adams, what you are to expect; for if sermons would have gone down, I believe—I will not be vain: but, to be concise with you, three bishops said; they were the best that ever were writ: but indeed there are a pretty moderate number printed already, and not all sold yet.’—

‘ Pray, Sir,’ said Adams, what do you think the numbers may amount to?’ ‘ Sir,’ answered Barnabas, ‘ a bookseller told me he

' believed five thousand volumes at least.'  
 ' Five thousand !' quoth the surgeon, ' what  
 ' can they be writ upon ? I remember when  
 ' I was a boy, I used to read one Tillotson's  
 ' sermons : and I am sure, if a man practised  
 ' half so much as is in one of those sermons,  
 ' he will go to heaven.' ' Doctor,' cried  
 Barnabas, ' you have a profane way of  
 ' talking, for which I must reprove you. A  
 ' man can never have his duty too frequent-  
 ' ly inculcated into him. And as for Til-  
 ' lotson, to be sure he was a good writer,  
 ' and said things very well ; but comparisons  
 ' are odious ; another man may write as well  
 ' as he—I believe there are some of my ser-  
 ' mons,'-----and then he applied the candle  
 to the pipe.-----' And I believe there are  
 ' some of my discourses,' cries Adams,  
 ' which the bishops would not think totally  
 ' unworthy of being printed ; and I have  
 ' been informed, I might procure a very  
 ' large sum (indeed an immense one) on  
 ' them. ' I doubt that,' answered Barnabas :  
 ' however, if you desire to make some money  
 ' of them, perhaps you may sell them by ad-  
 ' vertising the manuscript-sermons of a cler-  
 ' gyman lately deceased, all warranted ori-  
 ' ginals, and never printed. And now I  
 ' think of it, I should be obliged to you, if  
 ' there be ever a funeral one among them,

‘ to lend it me: for I am this very day to  
 ‘ preach a funeral sermon; for which I have  
 ‘ not penned a line, tho’ I am to have a  
 ‘ double price.’ Adams answered, He had  
 but one, which he feared would not serve  
 his purpose, being sacred to the memory of  
 a magistrate, who had exerted himself very  
 singularly in the preservation of the morality  
 of his neighbours, infomuch that he had  
 neither ale-house nor lewd woman in the  
 parish where he lived——‘ No,’ replied  
 Barnabas, ‘ that will not do quite so well; for  
 ‘ the deceased upon whose virtues I am to  
 ‘ harangue, was a little too much addicted to  
 ‘ liquor and publicly kept a mistress.-----I  
 ‘ believe I must take a common sermon, and  
 ‘ trust to my memory to introduce some-  
 ‘ thing handsome on him.’---‘ To your in-  
 ‘ vention rather,’ said the doctor, ‘ your  
 ‘ memory will be apter to put you out: for  
 ‘ no man living remembers any thing good  
 ‘ of him.’

With such kind of spiritual discourse, they  
 emptied the bowl of punch, paid their rec-  
 koning, and separated: Adams and the doc-  
 tor went up to Joseph, Parson Barnabas  
 departed to celebrate the aforesaid deceased,  
 and the exciseman descended into the cellar  
 to gauge the vessels.

Joseph was now ready to sit down to a loin

of mutton, and waited for Mr Adams, when he and the doctor came in. The doctor having felt his pulse, and examined his wounds, declared him much better, which he imputed to that sanative soporiferous draught; a medicine, whose virtues, he said, were never to be sufficiently extolled. And great, indeed, they must be, if Joseph was so much indebted to them as the doctor imagined; since nothing more than those effluvia, which escaped the cork, could have contributed to his recovery: for the medicine had stood untouched in the window ever since its arrival.

Joseph passed that day and the three following, with his friend Adams; in which nothing so remarkable happened as the swift progress of his recovery. As he had an excellent habit of body, his wounds were now almost healed; and his bruises gave him so little uneasiness, that he pressed Mr Adams to let him depart, told him he should never be able to return sufficient thanks for all his favours; but begged that he might no longer delay his journey to London.

Adams, notwithstanding the ignorance, as he conceived it, of Mr Tow-ouse, and the envy (for such he thought it) of Mr Barnabas, had great expectations from his sermons: seeing therefore Joseph in so good a

way, he told him he would agree to his setting out the next morning in the stage-coach; that he believed he should have sufficient, after the reckoning paid, to procure him one day's conveyance in it, and afterwards he would be able to set on foot, or might be favoured with a lift in some neighbour's waggon, especially as there was then to be a fair in the town whither the coach would carry him, to which numbers from his parish resorted.---And as to himself, he agreed to proceed to the great city.

They were now walking in the inn-yard, when a fat, fair, short person rode in, and alighting from his horse, went directly up to Barnabas, who was smoking his pipe on a bench. The parson and the stranger shook one another very lovingly by the hand, and went into a room together.

The evening now coming on, Joseph retired to his chamber, whither the good Adams accompanied him; and took this opportunity to expatiate on the great mercies God had lately shewn him, of which he ought not only to have the deepest inward sense, but likewise to express outward thankfulness for them. They therefore fell both on their knees, and spent a considerable time in prayer and thanksgiving.

They had just finished, when Betty came



in and told Mr Adams, Mr Barnabas desired to speak to him on some business of consequence below stairs. Joseph desired, if it was likely to detain him long, he would let him know it, that he might go to bed, which Adams promised, and in that case they wished one another a good night.

## C H A P. XVII.

*A pleasant discourse between the two parsons and the bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.*

AS soon as Adams came into the room, Mr Barnabas introduced him to the stranger, who was, he told him, a bookseller, and would be as likely to deal with him for his sermons as any man whatever. Adams, saluting the stranger, answered Barnabas, that he was very much obliged to him; that nothing could be more convenient; for he had no other business to the great city, and was heartily desirous of returning with the young man who was just recovered of his misfortune. He then snapt his fingers (as was usual with him), and took two or three turns about the room in an ecstasy.---And to

induce the bookseller to be as expeditious as possible, as likewise to offer him a better price for his commodity, he assured him their meeting was extremely lucky to himself: for that he had the most pressing occasion for money at that time, his own being almost spent, and having a friend then in the same inn who was just recovered from some wounds he had received from robbers, and was in a most indigent condition: 'So that nothing,' says he, 'could be so opportune, for the supplying both our necessities, as my making an immediate bargain with you.'

As soon as he had seated himself, the stranger began in these words; 'Sir, I do not care absolutely to deny engaging in what my friend Mr Barnabas recommends: but sermons are mere drugs. The trade is so vastly stocked with them, that really unless they come out with the name of Whitefield or Wesley, or some other such great man, as a bishop, or those sort of people, I don't care to touch, unless now it was a sermon preached on the 30th of January, or we could say in the title page, Published at the earnest request of the congregation, or the inhabitants: but truly for a dry piece of sermons, I had rather be excused; especially, as my hands are so full at present. However, Sir, as Mr Barnabas mentioned

“ them to me, I will, if you please, take the  
 ‘ manuscript with me to town, and send  
 ‘ you my opinion of it in a very short time.’

‘ O,’ said Adams, ‘ if you desire it, I will  
 ‘ read two or three discourses as a specimen.’  
 This Barnabas, who loved sermons no better  
 than a grocer doth figs, immediately objected  
 to, and advised Adams to let the bookseller  
 have his sermons; telling him, if he gave him  
 a direction, he might be certain of a speedy  
 answer: adding, he need not scruple trusting  
 them in his possession. ‘ No,’ said the book-  
 seller, ‘ if it was a play that had been acted  
 ‘ twenty nights together, I believe it would  
 ‘ be safe.’

Adams did not at all relish the last ex-  
 pression; he said, he was sorry to hear ser-  
 mons compared to plays. ‘ Not by me, I  
 ‘ assure you,’ cry’d the bookseller, ‘ though  
 ‘ I don’t know whether the Licensing Act may  
 ‘ not shortly bring them to the same foot-  
 ‘ ing: but I have formerly known a hundred  
 ‘ guineas given for a play—.’ ‘ More shame  
 ‘ for those who gave it,’ cry’d Barnabas.  
 ‘ Why so?’ said the bookseller, ‘ for they  
 ‘ got hundreds by it.’ ‘ But is there no  
 ‘ difference between conveying good or ill  
 ‘ instructions to mankind?’ said Adams;  
 ‘ would not an honest mind rather lose money  
 ‘ by the one, than gain it by the other?’

‘ If you can find any such, I will not be  
 ‘ their hindrance,’ answered the bookseller;  
 ‘ but I think those persons who get by preach-  
 ‘ ing sermons, are the properest to lose by  
 ‘ printing them: for my part, the copy that  
 ‘ sells best, will be always the best copy in my  
 ‘ opinion; I am no enemy to sermons, but  
 ‘ because they don’t sell; for I would as soon  
 ‘ print one of Whitefield’s as any farce what-  
 ‘ ever.’

‘ Whoever prints such heterodox stuff  
 ‘ ought to be hang’d,’ says Barnabas. ‘ Sir,’  
 said he, turning to Adams, ‘ this fellow’s  
 ‘ writings (I know not whether you have  
 ‘ seen them) are levelled at the clergy. He  
 ‘ would reduce us to the example of the pri-  
 ‘ mitive ages, forsooth! and would insinuate  
 ‘ to the people that a clergyman ought to be  
 ‘ always preaching and praying. He pre-  
 ‘ tends to understand the scripture literally,  
 ‘ and would make mankind believe, that the  
 ‘ poverty and low estate which was recom-  
 ‘ mended to the church in its infancy, and  
 ‘ was only a temporary doctrine adapted to her  
 ‘ under persecution, was to be preserved in  
 ‘ her flourishing and established state. Sir,  
 ‘ the principles of Toland, Woolaston, and  
 ‘ all the free-thinkers, are not calculated to  
 ‘ do half the mischief, as those professed by  
 ‘ this fellow and his followers.’

‘ Sir,’ answered Adams, ‘ if Mr White-  
 ‘ field had carried this doctrine no farther  
 ‘ than you mention, I should have remained,  
 ‘ as I once was, his well-wisher. I am my-  
 ‘ self as great an enemy to the luxury and  
 ‘ splendor of the clergy as he can be. I do  
 ‘ not, more than he, by the flourishing estate  
 ‘ of the church, understand the palaces,  
 ‘ equipages, dress, furniture, rich dainties,  
 ‘ and vast fortunes of her ministers. Surely  
 ‘ those things, which favour so strongly of  
 ‘ this world, become not the servants of one  
 ‘ who professed his kingdom was not of it:  
 ‘ but when he began to call nonsense and  
 ‘ enthusiasm to his aid, and set up the de-  
 ‘ testable doctrine of faith against good  
 ‘ works, I was his friend no longer; for  
 ‘ surely that doctrine was coined in hell, and  
 ‘ one would think none but the devil himself  
 ‘ could have the confidence to preach it.  
 ‘ For can any thing be more derogatory  
 ‘ to the honour of God, than for men to  
 ‘ imagine that the all-wise being will here-  
 ‘ after say to the good and virtuous, “ Not-  
 ‘ withstanding the purity of thy life, not-  
 ‘ withstanding that constant rule of virtue  
 ‘ and goodness in which you walked upon  
 ‘ earth, still, as thou didst not believe every  
 ‘ thing in the true orthodox manner, thy  
 ‘ want of faith shall condemn thee?” Or,

‘ on the other side, can any doctrine have a  
 ‘ more pernicious influence on society, than  
 ‘ a persuasion, that it will be a good plea for  
 ‘ the villain at the last day; “ LORD, it is  
 ‘ true I never obeyed one of thy commands;  
 ‘ yet punish me not, for I believe them all?”  
 ‘ I suppose, Sir,’ said the bookseller, ‘ your  
 ‘ sermons are of a different kind!’ ‘ Ay,  
 ‘ Sir,’ said Adams, ‘ the contrary, I thank  
 ‘ Heaven, is inculcated in almost every page,  
 ‘ or I should belye my own opinion, which  
 ‘ hath always been, that a virtuous and  
 ‘ good Turk, or heathen, are more accept-  
 ‘ able in the sight of their Creator, than a  
 ‘ vicious and wicked Christian, though his  
 ‘ faith was as perfectly orthodox as St Paul’s  
 ‘ himself.’—‘ I wish you success,’ says the  
 bookseller, ‘ but must beg to be excused, as  
 ‘ my hands are so very full at present; and  
 ‘ indeed I am afraid you will find a back-  
 ‘ wardness in the trade to engage in a book  
 ‘ which the clergy would be certain to cry  
 ‘ down.’ ‘ God forbid,’ says Adams, ‘ any  
 ‘ books should be propagated which the  
 ‘ clergy would cry down: but if you mean  
 ‘ by the clergy, some few designing factious  
 ‘ men, who have it at heart to establish some  
 ‘ favourite schemes at the price of the liberty  
 ‘ of mankind, and the very essence of reli-  
 ‘ gion, it is not in the power of such persons



‘ to decry any book they please; witness that  
 ‘ excellent book called, “ A plain account  
 “ of the nature and end of the Sacrament;”  
 ‘ a book written (if I may venture on the ex-  
 ‘ pression) with the pen of an angel, and  
 ‘ calculated to restore the true use of Chri-  
 ‘ stianity, and of that sacred institution: for  
 ‘ what could tend more to the noble pur-  
 ‘ poses of religion, than frequent cheerful  
 ‘ meetings among the members of a society,  
 ‘ in which they should, in the presence of  
 ‘ one another, and in the service of the Su-  
 ‘ preme Being, make promises of being good,  
 ‘ friendly, and benevolent to each other?  
 ‘ Now this excellent book was attacked by a  
 ‘ party, but unsuccessfully.’ At these words  
 Barnabas fell a ringing with all the violence  
 imaginable; upon which a servant attending,  
 he bid him bring a bill immediately: for  
 that he was in company, for aught he knew,  
 with the devil himself; and he expected to  
 hear the Alcoran, the Leviathan, or Woolston  
 commended, if he staid a few minutes longer.  
 Adams desired, as he was so much moved at  
 his mentioning a book, which he did without  
 apprehending any possibility of offence, that  
 he would be so kind to propose any objec-  
 tions he had to it, which he would endea-  
 vour to answer. ‘ I propose objections?’  
 said Barnabas, ‘ I never read a syllable in

‘ any such wicked book ; I never saw it in my  
 ‘ life, I assure you.’--Adams was going to an-  
 swer, when a most hideous uproar began in  
 the inn, Mrs Tow-wouse, Mr Tow-wouse and  
 Betty, all lifting up their voices together : but  
 Mrs Tow-wouse’s voice, like a base viol in a  
 concert, was clearly and distinctly distingui-  
 shed among the rest, and was heard to articu-  
 late the following founds,--‘ O you damn’d  
 ‘ villain, is this the return to all the care I  
 ‘ have taken of your family ? this the reward  
 ‘ of my virtue ? Is this the manner in which  
 ‘ you behave to one who brought you a  
 ‘ fortune, and preferred you to so many  
 ‘ matches, all your betters ? To abuse my  
 ‘ bed, my own bed, with my own servant :  
 ‘ but I’ll maul the slut, I’ll tear her nasty  
 ‘ eyes out ; was ever such a pitiful dog, to  
 ‘ take up with such a mean trollop ? If she  
 ‘ had been a gentlewoman like myself, it had  
 ‘ been some excuse ; but a beggarly saucy  
 ‘ dirty servant maid.-----Get you out of my  
 ‘ house, you whore.’ To which she added  
 another name, which we do not care to stain  
 our paper with. It was a monosyllable be-  
 ginning with a b—, and indeed was the same,  
 as if she had pronounced the words, She-Dog.  
 Which term we shall, to avoid offence, use  
 on this occasion, though, indeed, both the  
 mistress and maid uttered the abovementioned

b—, a word extremely disgusting to females of the lower sort. Betty had borne all hitherto with patience, and had uttered only lamentations: but the last appellation stung her to the quick. ‘I am a woman as well as yourself,’ she roared out, ‘and no she-dog; and if I have been a little naughty, I am not the first; if I have been no better than I should be,’ cries she sobbing, ‘that’s no reason you should call me out of my name; my be-betters are worse than me.’ ‘Huzzy, huzzy,’ says Mrs Tow-wouse, ‘have you the impudence to answer me? Did I not catch you, you saucy -----’ and then again repeated the terrible word so odious to female ears. ‘I can’t bear that name,’ answered Betty: ‘if I have been wicked, I am to answer for it myself in the other world; but I have done nothing that’s unnatural; and I will go out of your house this moment: for I will never be called She-Dog by any mistress in England.’ Mrs Tow-wouse then armed herself with the spit; but was prevented from executing any dreadful purpose by Mr Adams, who confined her arms with the strength of a wrist which Hercules would not have been ashamed of. Mr Tow-wouse being caught, as our lawyers express it, with the manner, and having no defence to make, very pru-

## 138 THE ADVENTURES OF

dently withdrew himself; and Betty committed herself to the protection of the hostler, who, though she could not conceive him pleased with what had happened, was, in her opinion, rather a gentler beast than her mistress.

Mrs Tow-wouse, at the intercession of Mr Adams, and finding the enemy vanished, began to compose herself, and at length recovered the usual serenity of her temper, in which we will leave her, to open to the reader the steps which led to a catastrophe common enough, and comical enough too, perhaps in modern history, yet often fatal to the repose and well-being of families, and the subject of many tragedies, both in life and on the stage.

### C H A P. XVIII.

*The history of Betty the chambermaid, and an account of what occasioned the violent scene in the preceding chapter.*

**B**ETTY, who was the occasion of all this hurry, had some good qualities. She had good-nature, generosity and compassion; but unfortunately her constitution was composed of those warm ingredients, which, though the purity of courts or nunneries might have happily controuled them,

were by no means able to endure the ticklish situation of a chambermaid at an inn, who is daily liable to the solicitations of lovers of all complexions, to the dangerous addresses of fine gentlemen of the army, who sometimes are obliged to reside with them a whole year together; and above all are exposed to the caresses of footmen, stage-coachmen, and drawers; all of whom employ the whole artillery of kissing, flattering, bribing, and every other weapon which is to be found in the whole armoury of love, against them.

Betty, who was but one and twenty, had now lived three years in this dangerous situation, during which she had escaped pretty well. An ensign of foot was the first person who made an impression on her heart; he did indeed raise a flame in her, which required the care of a surgeon to cool.

Whilst she burnt for him, several others burnt for her. Officers of the army, young gentlemen travelling the western circuit, inoffensive squires, and some of graver character were set afire by her charms!

At length, having perfectly recovered the effects of her first unhappy passion, she seemed to have vowed a state of perpetual chastity. She was long deaf to all the sufferings of her lovers, till one day, at a neighbouring fair, the rhetoric of John the hostler, with a new



straw hat, and a pint of wine, made a second conquest over her.

She did not, however, feel any of these flames on this occasion, which had been the consequence of the former amour; nor indeed those other ill effects, which prudent young women very justly apprehend from too absolute an indulgence to the pressing endearments of their lovers. This latter, perhaps, was a little owing to her not being entirely constant to John, with whom she permitted Tom Whipwell the stage-coachman, and now and then a handsome young traveller to share her favours.

Mr Tow-wouse had for some time cast the languishing eyes of affection on this young maiden. He had laid hold on every opportunity of saying tender things to her, squeezing her by the hand, and sometimes kissing her lips: for as the violence of his passion had considerably abated to Mrs Tow-wouse; so, like water, which is stopt from its usual current in one place, it naturally sought a vent in another. Mrs Tow-wouse is thought to have perceived this abatement, and probably it added very little to the natural sweetness of her temper; for though she was as true to her husband as the dial to the sun, she was rather more desirous of being shone



on, as being more capable of feeling his warmth.

Ever since Joseph's arrival, Betty had conceived an extraordinary liking to him, which discovered itself more and more, as he grew better and better; till that fatal evening when, as she was warming his bed, her passion grew to such a height, and so perfectly mastered both her modesty and her reason, that after so many fruitless hints and sly insinuations, she at last threw down the warming-pan, and embracing him with great eagerness, swore he was the handsomest creature she had ever seen.

Joseph in great confusion leapt from her, and told her, he was sorry to see a young woman cast off all regard to modesty: but she had gone too far to recede, and grew so very indecent, that Joseph was obliged, contrary to his inclination, to use some violence to her, and taking her in his arms, he shut her out of the room, and locked the door.

How ought man to rejoice, that his chastity is always in his own power; that if he hath sufficient strength of mind, he hath always a competent strength of body to defend himself, and cannot, like a poor weak woman, be ravished against his will!

Betty was in the most violent agitation at this disappointment. Rage and lust pulled

her heart, as with two strings, two different ways; one moment she thought of stabbing Joseph, the next of taking him in her arms, and devouring him with kisses; but the latter passion was far more prevalent. Then she thought of revenging his refusal on herself: but whilst she was engaged in this meditation, happily Death presented himself to her in so many shapes of drowning, hanging, poisoning, &c. that her distracted mind could resolve on none. In this perturbation of spirit, it accidentally occurred to her memory, that her master's bed was not made; she therefore went directly to his room; where he happened at that time to be engaged at his bureau. As soon as she saw him, she attempted to retire. but he called her back, and taking her by the hand, squeezed her so tenderly, at the same time whispered so many soft things into her ears, and then pressed her so closely with his kisses, that the vanquished fair one, whose passions were already raised, and which were not so whimsically capricious that one man only could lay them, though, perhaps, she would have rather preferred that one: the vanquished fair-one quietly submitted, I say, to her master's will, who had just attained the accomplishment of his bliss, when Mrs Tow-wouse unexpectedly entered the room, and caused all that confusion which

we have before seen, and which it is not necessary at present to take any farther notice of: since, without the assistance of a single hint from us, every reader of any speculation, or experience, though not married himself, may easily conjecture, that it concluded with the discharge of Betty, the submission of Mr Tow-wouse, with some things to be performed on his side by way of gratitude for his wife's goodness in being reconciled to him, with many hearty promises never to offend any more in the like manner; and lastly, his quietly and contentedly bearing to be reminded of his transgressions, as a kind of penance, once or twice a-day, during the residue of his life.

## BOOK SECOND.

### CHAPTER I.

#### *Of divisions in authors.*

**T**H E R E are certain mysteries or secrets in all trades, from the highest to the lowest, from that of prime-ministering to this of authoring, which are seldom discovered, unless to members of the same calling. Among those used by us gentlemen of the latter occupation, I take this of dividing our works into books and chapters to be none of the least considerable. Now, for want of being truly acquainted with this secret, common readers imagine, that by this art of dividing, we mean only to swell our works to a much larger bulk than they would otherwise be extended to. These several places therefore in our paper, which are filled with our books and chapters, are understood as so much buckram, stays, and stay-tape, in a tailor's bill, serving only to make up the sum total, commonly found at the bottom of our first page, and of his last.

But in reality the case is otherwise; and in this, as well as all other instances, we con-

sult the advantage of our reader, not our own; and indeed many notable uses arise to him from this method: for, first, those little spaces between our chapters may be looked upon as an inn or resting-place, where he may stop and take a glass, or any other refreshment, as it pleases him. Nay, our fine readers will, perhaps, be scarce able to travel farther than through one of them in a day. As to those vacant pages which are placed between our books, they are to be regarded as those stages, where, in long journeys, the traveller stays some time to repose himself, and consider of what he hath seen in the parts he hath already past through; a consideration which I take the liberty to recommend a little to the reader: for, however swift his capacity may be, I would not advise him to travel through these pages too fast: for if he doth, he may probably miss the seeing some curious productions of nature, which will be observed by the slower and more accurate reader. A volume without any such places of rest resembles the openings of wilds or seas, which tires the eye, and fatigues the spirits when entered upon.

Secondly, what are the contents prefixed to every chapter, but so many inscriptions over the gates of inns (to continue the same metaphor) informing the reader what enter-

tainment he is to expect, which, if he likes not, he may travel on to the next: for, in biography, as we are not tied down to an exact concatenation equally with other historians; so a chapter or two (for instance this I am now writing) may be often passed over without any injury to the whole. And in these inscriptions I have been as faithful as possible, not imitating the celebrated Montaigne, who promises you one thing and gives you another; nor some title-page authors, who promise a great deal, and produce nothing at all.

There are, besides these more obvious benefits, several others which our readers enjoy from this art of dividing; though perhaps most of them too mysterious to be presently understood by any who are not initiated into the science of authoring. To mention therefore but one which is most obvious, it prevents spoiling the beauty of a book by turning down its leaves, a method otherwise necessary to those readers, who (though they read with great improvement and advantage) are apt, when they return to their study, after half an hour's absence, to forget where they left off.

These divisions have the sanction of great antiquity. Homer not only divided his great work into twenty-four books, (in compliment



perhaps to the twenty-four letters, to which he had very particular obligations) but, according to the opinion of some very sagacious critics, hawked them all separately, delivering only one book at a time, (probably by subscription.) He was the first inventor of the art which hath so long lain dormant, of publishing by numbers; an art now brought to such perfection, that even dictionaries are divided and exhibited piece-meal to the public; nay, one bookseller hath (to encourage learning, and ease the public) contrived to give them a dictionary in this divided manner, for only fifteen shillings more than it would have cost entire.

Virgil hath given us his poem in twelve books, an argument of his modesty; for by that doubtless he would insinuate, that he pretends to no more than half the merit of the Greek: for the same reason, our Milton went originally no farther than ten; 'till being puffed up by the praise of his friends, he put himself on the same footing with the Roman poet.

I shall not however enter so deep into this matter as some very learned critics have done, who have with infinite labour and acute discernment discovered what books are proper for embellishment, and what required simplicity only, particularly with regard to families,

which I think are now generally agreed to become any book but the first.

I will dismiss this chapter with the following observation: that it becomes an author generally to divide a book, as it does a butcher to joint his meat; for such assistance is of great help to both the reader and the carver. And now having indulged myself a little, I will endeavour to indulge the curiosity of my reader, who is no doubt impatient to know what he will find in the subsequent chapters of this book.

## C H A P. II.

*A surprizing instance of Mr Adams's short memory, with the unfortunate consequences which it brought on Joseph.*

**M**R Adams and Joseph were now ready to depart different ways, when an accident determined the former to return with his friend, which Tow-wouse, Barnabas, and the bookseller, had not been able to do. This accident was, that those sermons, which the parson was travelling to London to publish there, O my good reader, left behind; what he had mistaken for them in the saddle-bags being no other than three shirts, a pair of shoes, and some other necessaries, which Mrs Adams, who thought her hus-

band would want shirts more than sermons on his journey, had carefully provided him.

This discovery was now luckily owing to the presence of Joseph at the opening the saddle-bags; who having heard his friend say, he carried with him nine volumes of sermons, and not being of that sect of philosophers, who can reduce all the matter of the world into a nut-shell, seeing there was no room for them in the bags, where the parson had said they were deposited had the curiosity to cry out, ' Bless me, Sir, where ' are your sermons?' The parson answered, ' There, there, child, there they are under ' my shirts.' Now it happened that he had taken forth his last shirt, and the vehicle remained visibly empty. ' Sure, Sir,' says Joseph, ' there is nothing in the bags.' Upon which Adams starting, and testifying some surprize, cried, ' Hey! fy, fy upon it, ' they are not here sure enough. Ay, they ' are certainly left behind.'

Joseph was greatly concerned at the uneasiness which he apprehended his friend must feel from this disappointment: he begged him to pursue his journey, and promised he would himself return with the books to him, with the utmost expedition. ' No, ' thank you, child,' answered Adams, ' it ' shall not be so. What would it avail me

' to tarry in the great city, unless I had my  
 ' discourses with me, which are *ut ita dicantur*  
 ' the sole cause, the *aitia monotata* of my  
 ' peregrination. No, child, as this accident  
 ' hath happened, I am resolved to return  
 ' back to my cure, together with you; which  
 ' indeed my inclination sufficiently leads me  
 ' to. This disappointment may perhaps be  
 ' intended for my good.' He concluded with  
 a verse out of Theocritus which signifies no  
 more than, that sometimes it rains, and some-  
 times the sun shines.

Joseph bowed with obedience and thank-  
 fulness for the inclination which the parson  
 expressed of returning with him; and now  
 the bill was called for, which, on examina-  
 tion, amounted within a shilling to the sum  
 Mr Adams had in his pocket. Perhaps the  
 reader may wonder how he was able to pro-  
 duce a sufficient sum for so many days; that  
 he may not be surpris'd therefore, it cannot  
 be unnecessary to acquaint him, that he had  
 borrowed a guinea of a servant belonging to  
 the coach and six, who had been formerly  
 one of his parishioners, and whose master,  
 the owner of the coach, then lived within  
 three miles of him; for so good was the  
 credit of Mr Adams, that even Mr Peter the  
 Lady Booby's steward would have lent him  
 a guinea with very little security.

Mr Adams discharged the bill, and they were both setting out, having agreed to ride and ty; a method of travelling much used by persons who have but one horse between them, and is thus performed. The two travellers set out together, one on horseback, the other on foot; now, as it generally happens that he on horseback outgoes him on foot, the custom is, that when he arrives at the distance agreed on, he is to dismount, ty the horse to some gate, tree, post, or other thing, and then proceed on foot; when the other comes up to the horse, he unties him, mounts and gallops on, 'till having passed by his fellow-traveller, he likewise arrives at the place of tying. And this is that method of travelling so much in use among our prudent ancestors, who knew that horses had mouths as well as legs, and that they could not use the latter, without being at the expence of suffering the beasts themselves to use the former. This was the method in use in those days, when instead of a coach and six, a member of parliament's lady used to mount a pillion behind her husband; and a grave ferjeant at law condescended to amble to Westminster on an easy pad, with his clerk kicking his heels behind him.

Adams was now gone some minutes, having insisted on Joseph's beginning the jour-

ney on horseback, and Joseph had his foot in the stirrup, when the hostler presented him a bill for the horse's board during his residence at the inn. Joseph said Mr Adams had paid all; but this matter being referred to Mr Tow-wouse, was by him decided in favour of the hostler, and indeed with truth and justice; for this was a fresh instance of that shortness of memory which did not arise from want of parts, but that continual hurry in which parson Adams was always involved.

Joseph was now reduced to a dilemma which extremely puzzled him. The sum due for horse meat was twelve shillings, (for Adams, who had borrowed the beast of his clerk, had ordered him to be fed as well as they could feed him), and the cash in his pocket amounted to sixpence, (for Adams had divided the last shilling with him.) Now though there have been some ingenious persons who have contrived to pay twelve shillings with sixpence, Joseph was not one of them. He had never contracted a debt in his life, and was consequently the less ready at an expedient to extricate himself. Tow-wouse was willing to give him credit till next time, to which Mrs Tow-wouse would probably have consented (for such was Joseph's beauty, that it had made some impression



even on that piece of flint which that good woman wore in her bosom by way of heart.) Joseph would have found therefore, very likely, the passage free, had he not, when he honestly discovered the nakedness of his pockets, pulled out that little piece of gold which we have mentioned before. This caused Mrs Tow-wouse's eyes to water; she told Joseph, she did not conceive a man could want money whilst he had gold in his pocket. Joseph answered, he had such a value for that little piece of gold, that he would not part with it for a hundred times the riches which the greatest esquire in the county was worth. 'A pretty way indeed,' said Mrs Tow-wouse, 'to run in debt, and then refuse to part with your money, because you have a value for it. I never knew any piece of gold of more value than as many shillings as it would change for.' 'Not to preserve my life from starving, nor to redeem it from a robber, would I part with this dear piece,' answered Joseph. 'What,' says Mrs Tow-wouse, 'I suppose it was given you by some vile trollop, some miss or other; if it had been the present of a virtuous woman, you would not have had such a value for it. My husband is a fool if he parts with the horse without being paid for him.' 'No, no, I can't

‘part with the horse indeed till I have the money,’ cried Tow-wouse. A resolution highly commended by a lawyer then in the yard, who declared Mr Tow-wouse might justify the detainer.

As we cannot therefore at present get Mr Joseph out of the inn, we shall leave him in it, and carry our reader on after parson Adams, who, his mind being perfectly at ease, fell into a contemplation on a passage in Æschylus, which entertained him for three miles together, without suffering him once to reflect on his fellow-traveller.

At length having spun out his thread, and being now at the summit of a hill, he cast his eyes backwards, and wondered that he could not see any sign of Joseph. As he left him ready to mount the horse, he could not apprehend any mischief had happened, neither could he suspect that he missed his way, it being so broad and plain: the only reason which presented itself to him, was, that he had met with an acquaintance who had prevailed with him to delay some time in discourse.

He therefore resolved to proceed slowly forwards, not doubting but that he should be shortly overtaken, and soon came to a large water, which filling the whole road, he saw no method of passing unless by wading

through, which he accordingly did up to his middle; but was no sooner got to the other side, than he perceived, if he had looked over the hedge, he would have found a foot-path capable of conducting him without wetting his shoes.

His surprize at Joseph's not coming up grew now very troublesome: he began to fear he knew not what; and as he determined to move no further, and, if he did not shortly overtake him, to return back, he wished to find a house of public entertainment where he might dry his cloaths, and refresh himself with a pint; but seeing no such, (for no other reason than because he did not cast his eyes a hundred yards forwards), he sat himself down on a stile, and pulled out his *Æschylus*.

A fellow passing presently by, Adams asked him, if he could direct him to an ale-house. The fellow, who had just left it, and perceived the house and sign to be within sight, thinking he had jeered him, and being of a morose temper, bade him follow his nose and be d—n'd. Adams told him he was a faucey jackanapes; upon which the fellow turned about angrily; but perceiving Adams clench his fist, he thought proper to go on without taking any further notice.

A horseman following immediately after,

and being asked the same question, answered,  
 ' Friend, there is one within a stone's throw ;  
 ' I believe you may see it before you.' Adams,  
 lifting up his eyes, cried, ' I protest  
 ' and so there is ;' and thanking his informer,  
 proceeded directly to it.

## C H A P. III.

*The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same  
 gentleman, with Mr Adams's enquiry into  
 the religion of his host.*

**H**E had just entered the house, had cal-  
 led for his pint, and seated himself,  
 when two horsemen came to the door, and  
 fastening their horses to the rails, alighted.  
 They said there was a violent shower of rain  
 coming on, which they intended to weather  
 there, and went into a little room by them-  
 selves, not perceiving Mr Adams.

One of these immediately asked the other,  
 if he had seen a more comical adventure a  
 great while? Upon which the other said,  
 ' he doubted whether by law, the landlord  
 ' could justify detaining the horse for his  
 ' corn and hay.' But the former answered,  
 ' Undoubtedly he can; it is an adjudged  
 ' case, and I have known it tried.'

Adams, who though he was, as the reader  
 may suspect, a little inclined to forgetfulness,

never wanted more than a hint to remind him, over-hearing their discourse, immediately suggested to himself that this was his own horse, and that he had forgot to pay for him, which, upon enquiry, he was certified of by the gentlemen; who added, that the horse was likely to have more rest than food, unless he was paid for.

The poor parson resolved to return presently to the inn, though he knew no more than Joseph how to procure his horse his liberty: he was however prevailed on to stay under cover, 'till the shower, which was now very violent, was over.

The three travellers then sat down together over a mug of good beer; when Adams, who had observed a gentleman's house as he passed along the road, enquired to whom it belonged: one of the horsemen had no sooner mentioned the owner's name, than the other began to revile him in the most opprobrious terms. The English language scarce affords a single reproachful word which he did not vent on this occasion. He charged him likewise with many particular facts. He said,---  
 ' he no more regarded a field of wheat when  
 ' he was hunting, than he did the highway;  
 ' that he had injured several poor farmers,  
 ' by trampling their corn under his horse's  
 ' heels; and if any of them begged him

158 THE ADVENTURES OF

' with the utmost submission to refrain, his  
 ' horse-whip was always ready to do them  
 ' justice.' He said, ' that he was the greatest  
 ' tyrant to the neighbours in every other in-  
 ' stance, and would not suffer a farmer to  
 ' keep a gun, though he might justify it by  
 ' law; and in his own family so cruel a ma-  
 ' ster, that he never kept a servant a twelve-  
 ' month. In his capacity as a justice,' con-  
 ' tinued he, ' he behaves so partially, that he  
 ' commits or acquits just as he is in the  
 ' humour, without any regard to truth or  
 ' evidence: the devil may carry any one be-  
 ' fore him for me; I would rather be tried  
 ' before some judges, than be a prosecutor  
 ' before him; if I had an estate in the neigh-  
 ' bourhood, I would sell it for half the value,  
 ' rather than live near him.'

Adams shook his head, and said, ' he was  
 ' sorry such men were suffered to proceed  
 ' with impunity, and that riches could set  
 ' any man above law.' The reviler a little  
 after retiring into the yard, the gentleman  
 who had first mentioned his name to Adams,  
 began to assure him, ' that his companion  
 ' was a prejudiced person. It is true,' says  
 he, ' perhaps, that he may have sometimes  
 ' pursued his game over a field of corn, but  
 ' he hath always made the party ample sa-  
 ' tisfaction; that so far from tyrannizing



‘ over his neighbours, or taking away their  
 ‘ guns, he himself knew several farmers not  
 ‘ qualified, who not only kept guns, but  
 ‘ killed game with them. That he was the  
 ‘ best of masters to his servants, and several  
 ‘ of them had grown old in his service. That  
 ‘ he was the best justice of peace in the king-  
 ‘ dom, and to his certain knowledge had  
 ‘ decided many difficult points, which were  
 ‘ referred to him, with the greatest equity,  
 ‘ and the highest wisdom. And he verily  
 ‘ believed, several persons would give a year’s  
 ‘ purchase more for an estate near him, than  
 ‘ under the wings of any other great man.’  
 He had just finished his encomium, when his  
 companion returned, and acquainted him  
 the storm was over. Upon which they pre-  
 sently mounted their horses and departed.

Adams, who was in the utmost anxiety at  
 those different characters of the same person,  
 asked his host if he knew the gentleman: for  
 he began to imagine they had by mistake  
 been speaking of two several gentlemen.  
 ‘ No, no, master!’ answered the host, a  
 shrewd cunning fellow; ‘ I know the gentle-  
 ‘ man very well of whom they have been  
 ‘ speaking, as I do the gentleman who spoke  
 ‘ of him. As for riding over other men’s  
 ‘ corn, to my knowledge he hath not been  
 ‘ on horseback these two years. I never

160 THE ADVENTURES OF

' heard he did any injury of that kind; and  
 ' as to making reparation, he is not so free  
 ' of his money as that comes to neither.  
 ' Nor did I ever hear of his taking away any  
 ' man's gun; nay, I know several that have  
 ' guns in their houses; but as for killing  
 ' game with them, no man is stricter; and I  
 ' believe he would ruin any who did. You  
 ' heard one of the gentlemen say, he was  
 ' the worst master in the world, and the  
 ' other that he is the best: but for my own  
 ' part, I know all his servants, and never  
 ' heard from any of them that he was either  
 ' one or the other.'—— 'Aye! aye!' says  
 Adams, 'and how doth he behave as a ju-  
 ' stice, pray?' 'Faith, friend,' answered the  
 host, 'I question whether he is in the com-  
 ' mission: the only cause I have heard he  
 ' hath decided a great while, was one between  
 ' those very two persons who just went out  
 ' of this house; and I am sure he determined  
 ' that justly, for I heard the whole matter.'  
 'Which did he decide it in favour of?'  
 quoth Adams. 'I think I need not answer  
 ' that question,' cried the host, 'after the  
 ' different characters you have heard of him.  
 ' It is not my business to contradict gentle-  
 ' men, while they are drinking in my house;  
 ' but I knew neither of them spoke a syllable  
 ' of truth.' 'God forbid!' said Adams,

' that men should arrive at such a pitch of  
 ' wickedness, to belye the character of their  
 ' neighbour from a little private affection;  
 ' or, what is infinitely worse, a private spite.  
 ' I rather believe we have mistaken them,  
 ' and they mean two other persons: for  
 ' there are many houses on the road.' ' Why  
 ' prithee, friend,' cries the host, ' dost thou  
 ' pretend never to have told a lie in thy  
 ' life?' ' Never a malicious one, I am cer-  
 ' tain,' answered Adams; ' nor with a de-  
 ' sign to injure the reputation of any man  
 ' living.' ' Pugh! malicious; no, no,' re-  
 ' plied the host; ' not malicious, with a de-  
 ' sign to hang a man, or bring him into  
 ' trouble; but surely, out of love to one's  
 ' self, one must speak better of a friend than  
 ' an enemy.' ' Out of love to yourself! you  
 ' should confine yourself to truth,' says A-  
 ' dams, ' for by doing otherwise, you injure  
 ' the noblest part of yourself, your immortal  
 ' soul. I can hardly believe any man such  
 ' an ideot to risque the loss of that by any  
 ' trifling gain, and the greatest gain in this  
 ' world is but dirt in comparison of what  
 ' shall be revealed hereafter.' Upon which  
 the host, taking up the cup, with a smile;  
 drank a health to Hereafter; adding, he was  
 for something present. ' Why,' says Adams  
 very gravely, ' do not you believe another:

' world?' To which the host answered, ' Yes,  
 ' he was no Atheist.' ' And you believe  
 ' you have an immortal soul?' cries Adams.  
 He answered, ' God forbid he should not.'  
 And ' heaven and hell?' said the parson.  
 The host then bid him ' not to profane; for  
 ' those were things not to be mentioned nor  
 ' thought of but in church.' Adams asked  
 him, ' Why he went to church, if what he  
 ' learned there had no influence on his con-  
 ' duct in life?' ' I go to church,' answered  
 the host, ' to say my prayers, and behave  
 ' godly.' ' And dost not thou,' cried Adams,  
 ' believe what thou hearest at church?'  
 ' Most part of it, Master,' returned the host.  
 ' And dost thou not then tremble,' cries  
 Adams, ' at the thought of eternal punish-  
 ' ment?' ' As for that, Master,' said he, ' I  
 ' never once thought about it: but what  
 ' signifies talking about matters so far off?  
 ' The mug is out, shall I draw another?'

Whilst he was going for that purpose, a  
 stage coach drove up to the door. The  
 coachman coming into the house, was asked  
 by the mistress, ' what passengers he had in  
 ' his coach!' ' A parcel of squinnygut b---s,  
 ' (says he) I have a good mind to overturn  
 ' them; you won't prevail upon them to  
 ' drink any thing, I assure you' Adams  
 asked him if he had not seen a young man.

on horseback on the road, (describing Joseph) : ‘ Aye, ’ said the coachman, ‘ a gentle-  
 ‘ woman in my coach that is his acquaint-  
 ‘ ance redeemed him and his horse ; he would  
 ‘ have been here before this time, had not  
 ‘ the storm driven him to shelter.’ ‘ God  
 ‘ bless her,’ said Adams, in a rapture ; nor  
 could he delay walking out to satisfy himself  
 who this charitable woman was ; but what  
 was his surprize, when he saw his old ac-  
 quaintance Madam Slipflop ? Her’s indeed  
 was not so great, because she had been in-  
 formed by Joseph, that he was on the road.  
 Very civil were the salutations on both sides ;  
 and Mrs Slipflop rebuked the hostess for de-  
 nyng the gentleman to be there when she  
 asked for him. But indeed the poor woman  
 had not erred designedly ; for Mrs Slipflop  
 asked for a clergyman ; and she had unhap-  
 pily mistaken Adams for a person travelling  
 to a neighbouring fair with the thimble and  
 button, or some other such operation : for  
 he marched in a swinging great, but short,  
 white coat with black buttons, a short wig,  
 and a hat, which so far from having a black  
 hatband, had nothing black about it.

Joseph was now come up, and Mrs Slip-  
 flop would have had him quit his horse to  
 the parson, and come himself into the coach :  
 but he absolutely refused, saying, he thanked



Heaven he was well enough recovered to be very able to ride; and added, he hoped he knew his duty better than to ride in a coach, while Mr Adams was on horseback.

Mrs Slipflop would have persisted longer, had not a lady in the coach put a short end to the dispute, by refusing to suffer a fellow in a livery to ride in the same coach with herself: so it was at length agreed that Adams should fill the vacant place in the coach, and Joseph should proceed on horseback.

They had not proceeded far before Mrs Slipflop, addressing herself to the parson, spoke thus: 'There hath been a strange alteration in our family, Mr Adams, since Sir Thomas's death.' 'A strange alteration indeed!' says Adams, 'as I gather from some hints which have dropped from Joseph.' 'Aye,' says she, 'I could never have believed it, but the longer one lives in the world, the more one sees. So Joseph hath given you hints.'---'But of what nature will always remain a perfect secret with me,' cries the parson; 'he forced me to promise before he would communicate any thing. I am indeed concerned to find her ladyship behave in so unbecoming a manner. I always thought her in the main a good lady, and should never have



' suspected her of thoughts so unworthy a  
 ' Christian, and with a young lad her own  
 ' servant.' ' These things are no secrets to  
 ' me, I assure you,' cries Slipflop; ' and I  
 ' believe they will be none any where shortly:  
 ' for ever since the boy's departure, she hath  
 ' behaved more like a mad-woman than any  
 ' thing else.' ' Truly, I am heartily con-  
 ' cerned,' says Adams, ' for she was a good  
 ' sort of a lady; indeed I have often wished  
 ' she had attended a little more constantly  
 ' at the service, but she hath done a great  
 ' deal of good in the parish.' ' O, Mr A-  
 ' dams!' says Slipflop, ' people that don't  
 ' see all, often know nothing. Many things  
 ' have been given away in our family, I do  
 ' assure you, without her knowledge. I  
 ' have heard you say in the pulpit, we ought  
 ' not to brag: but indeed I can't avoid say-  
 ' ing, if she had kept the keys herself, the  
 ' poor would have wanted many a cordial  
 ' which I have let them have. As for my  
 ' late master, he was as worthy a man as  
 ' ever lived, and would have done infinite  
 ' good if he had not been controlled: but  
 ' he loved a quiet life, heavens rest his soul!  
 ' I am confident he is there, and enjoys a  
 ' quiet life, which some folks would not allow  
 ' him here.' Adams answered, he had never  
 heard this before, and was mistaken if she

herself, (for he remembered she used to commend her mistress and blame her master), had not formerly been of another opinion: 'I don't know,' replied she, 'what I might once think: but now I am confidous matters are as I tell you: the world will shortly see who hath been deceived; for my part, I say nothing but that it is wonderfome how some people can carry all things with a grave face.'

Thus Mr Adams and she discoursed, till they came opposite to a great house which stood at some distance from the road; a lady in the coach spying it, cried, Yonder lives the unfortunate Leonora, if one can justly call a woman unfortunate whom we must own at the same time guilty, and the author of her own calamity. This was abundantly sufficient to awaken the curiosity of Mr Adams, as indeed it did that of the whole company, who jointly solicted the lady to acquaint them with Leonora's history, since it seemed, by what she had said, to contain something remarkable.

The Lady, who was perfectly well bred, did not require many intreaties, and having only wished their entertainment might make amends for the company's attention, she began in the following manner.

## C H A P. IV.

*The history of Leonora: or, The unfortunate jilt.*

**L**EONORA was the daughter of a gentleman of fortune; she was tall and well-shaped, with a sprightliness in her countenance, which often attracts beyond more regular features joined with an insipid air; nor is this kind of beauty less apt to deceive than allure; the good-humour which it indicates being often mistaken for good-nature, and the vivacity for true understanding.

Leonora, who was now at the age of eighteen, lived with an aunt of her's in a town in the north of England. She was an extreme lover of gaiety: and very rarely missed a ball, or any other public assembly; where she had frequent opportunities of satisfying a greedy appetite of vanity with the preference which was given her by the men to almost every other woman present.

Among many young fellows who were particular in their gallantries towards her, Horatio soon distinguished himself in her eyes beyond all his competitors; she danced with more than ordinary gaiety when he happened to be her partner; neither the

fairness of the evening, nor the music of the nightingale, could lengthen her walk like his company. She affected no longer to understand the civilities of others: whilst she inclined so attentive an ear to every compliment of Horatio, that she often smiled, even when it was too delicate for her comprehension.

‘ Pray, Madam,’ says Adams, ‘ who was this Squire Horatio?’

Horatio, says the Lady, was a young gentleman of a good family, bred to the law, and had been some few years called to the degree of a barrister. His face and person were such as the generality allowed handsome: but he had a dignity in his air very rarely to be seen. His temper was of the saturnine complexion, and without the least taint of moroseness. He had wit and humour, with an inclination to satire, which he indulged rather too much.

This gentleman, who had contracted the most violent passion for Leonora, was the last person who perceived the probability of its success. The whole town had made the match for him, before he himself had drawn a confidence from her actions sufficient to mention his passion to her: for it was his opinion, (and perhaps he was there in the right), that it is highly impolitic to talk se-

riously of love to a woman before you have made such a progress in her affections, that she herself expects and desires to hear it.

But whatever diffidence the fears of a lover may create, which are apt to magnify every favour conferred on a rival, and to see the little advances towards themselves through the other end of the perspective; it was impossible that Horatio's passion should so blind his discernment, as to prevent his conceiving hopes from the behaviour of Leonora, whose fondness for him was now as visible to an indifferent person in their company, as his for her.

‘ I never knew any of these forward fluts  
‘ come to good,’ says the Lady, who refused  
Joseph's entrance into the coach, ‘ nor shall  
‘ I wonder at any thing she doth in the  
‘ sequel.’

The Lady proceeded in her story thus: It was in the midst of a gay conversation in the walks one evening, when Horatio whispered Leonora, that he was desirous to take a turn or two with her in private; for that he had something to communicate to her of great consequence. ‘ Are you sure it is of consequence?’ said she, smiling——‘ I hope,’ answered he, ‘ you will think so too, since  
‘ the whole future happiness of my life must  
‘ depend on the event.’

Leonora, who very much suspected what was coming, would have deferred it till another time: but Horatio, who had more than half conquered the difficulty of speaking, by the first motion, was so very importunate, that she at last yielded, and leaving the rest of the company, they turned aside into an unfrequented walk.

They had retired far out of sight of the company, both maintaining a strict silence. At last Horatio made a full stop, and taking Leonora, who stood pale and trembling, gently by the hand, he fetched a deep sigh, and then looking on her eyes with all the tenderness imaginable, he cried out in a faltering accent; ‘ O Leonora! is it necessary  
 ‘ for me to declare to you on what the future happiness of my life must be founded!  
 ‘ Must I say, there is something belonging  
 ‘ to you which is a bar to my happiness, and  
 ‘ which unless you will part with, I must be  
 ‘ miserable?’ ‘ What can that be?’ replied Leonora.----- ‘ No wonder,’ said he, ‘ you  
 ‘ are surpris’d that I should make an objection to any thing which is yours; yet sure  
 ‘ you may guess, since it is the only one  
 ‘ which the riches of the world, if they were  
 ‘ mine, should purchase of me---Oh it is that  
 ‘ which you must part with, to bestow all  
 ‘ the rest! Can Leonora, or rather will she,



‘doubt longer!-----Let me then whisper it  
 ‘in her ear----It is your name, Madam.  
 ‘It is by parting with that, by your conde-  
 ‘scension to be for ever mine, which must  
 ‘at once prevent me from being the most  
 ‘miserable, and will render me the happiest  
 ‘of mankind.’

Leonora, covered with blushes, and with  
 as angry a look as she could possibly put on,  
 told him, ‘that had she suspected what his  
 ‘declaration would have been, he should  
 ‘not have decoyed her from her company;  
 ‘that he had so surpris’d and frighted her,  
 ‘that she begged him to convey her back as  
 ‘quick as possible;’ which he, trembling  
 very near as much as herself, did.

‘More fool he,’ cried Slipflop, ‘it is a  
 ‘sign he knew very little of our sect.’ ‘Tru-  
 ‘ly, Madam,’ said Adams, ‘I think you are  
 ‘in the right; I should have insisted, to know  
 ‘a piece of her mind, when I had carried  
 ‘matters so far.’ But Mrs Grave-airs de-  
 sired the lady to omit all such fulsome stuff  
 in her story; for that it made her sick.

Well, then, Madam, to be as concise as  
 possible, said the lady, many weeks had not  
 passed after this interview, before Horatio  
 and Leonora were what they call on a good  
 footing together. All ceremonies except the  
 last were now over; the writings were now

drawn, and every thing was in the utmost forwardness preparative to the putting Horatio in possession of all his wishes. I will, if you please, repeat you a letter from each of them, which I have got by heart, and which will give you no small idea of their passion on both sides.

Mrs Grave-airs objected to hearing these letters: but being put to the vote, it was carried against her by all the rest in the coach; parson Adams contending for it with the utmost vehemence.

#### HORATIO to LEONORA.

“ **H**OW vain, most adorable creature, is  
 “ the pursuit of pleasure in the absence  
 “ of an object to which the mind is entirely  
 “ devoted, unless it have some relation to  
 “ that object! I was last night condemned  
 “ to the society of men of wit and learning,  
 “ which, however agreeable it might have  
 “ formerly been to me, now only gave me  
 “ a suspicion that they imputed my absence  
 “ in conversation to the true cause. For  
 “ which reason, when your engagements  
 “ forbid me the extatic happiness of seeing  
 “ you, I am always desirous to be alone;  
 “ since my sentiments for Leonora are so  
 “ delicate, that I cannot bear the apprehen-  
 “ sion of another’s prying into those delight-

“ ful endearments with which the warm  
 “ imagination of a lover will sometimes in-  
 “ dulse him, and which I suspect my eyes  
 “ then betray. To fear this discovery of  
 “ our thoughts, may perhaps appear too ri-  
 “ diculous a nicety to minds not susceptible  
 “ of all the tenderesses of this delicate pas-  
 “ sion. And surely we shall suspect there  
 “ are few such, when we consider that it re-  
 “ quires every human virtue, to exert itself  
 “ in its full extent. Since the beloved, whose  
 “ happiness it ultimately respects, may give  
 “ us charming opportunities of being brave  
 “ in her defence, generous to her wants,  
 “ compassionate to her afflictions, grateful  
 “ to her kindness; and, in the same man-  
 “ ner, of exercising every other virtue, which  
 “ he who would not do to any degree, and  
 “ that with the utmost rapture, can never  
 “ deserve the name of a lover: It is there-  
 “ fore with a view to the delicate modesty  
 “ of your mind that I cultivate it so purely  
 “ in my own; and it is that which will suf-  
 “ ficiently suggest to you the uneasiness I  
 “ bear from those liberties, which men, to  
 “ whom the world allow politeness, will  
 “ sometimes give themselves on these occa-  
 “ sions.

“ Can I tell you with what eagerness I  
 “ expect the arrival of that blessed day, when

“ I shall experience the falsehood of a com-  
 “ mon assertion, that the greatest human  
 “ happiness consists in hope? a doctrine  
 “ which no person had ever stronger reason  
 “ to believe than myself at present, since  
 “ none ever tasted such bliss as fires my bo-  
 “ som with the thoughts of spending my fu-  
 “ ture days with such a companion, and  
 “ that every action of my life will have the  
 “ glorious satisfaction of conducing to your  
 “ happiness.”

LEONORA to HORATIO \*.

“ **T**HE refinement of your mind has been  
 “ so evidently proved by every word  
 “ and action ever since I had first the plea-  
 “ sure of knowing you, that I thought it  
 “ impossible my good opinion of Horatio  
 “ could have been heightened to any addi-  
 “ tional proof of merit. This very thought  
 “ was my amusement when I received your  
 “ last letter, which when I opened, I confess  
 “ I was surpris'd to find the delicate senti-  
 “ ments expressed there, so far exceeded what  
 “ I thought could come even from you, (al-  
 “ though I knew all the generous principles  
 “ human nature is capable of, are centered

\* This letter was written by a young lady, on read-  
 ing the former — Most probably, this young lady was  
 Miss Sarah Fielding, sister of the author, and the in-  
 genious writer of the adventures of David Simple,  
 and other estimable pieces.

“ in your breast) that words cannot paint  
 “ what I feel on the reflection, that my hap-  
 “ piness shall be the ultimate end of all your  
 “ actions.

“ Oh Horatio ! what a life must that be,  
 “ where the meanest domestic cares are  
 “ sweetened by the pleasing consideration,  
 “ that the man on earth who best deserves,  
 “ and to whom you are most inclined to  
 “ give your affections, is to reap either pro-  
 “ fit or pleasure from all you do ! in such a  
 “ case toils must be turned into diversions,  
 “ and nothing but the unavoidable inconve-  
 “ niencies of life can make us remember that  
 “ we are mortal.

“ If the solitary turn of your thoughts,  
 “ and the desire of keeping them undisco-  
 “ vered, makes even the conversation of  
 “ men of wit and learning tedious to you,  
 “ what anxious hours must I spend who am  
 “ condemned by custom to the conversation  
 “ of women, whose natural curiosity leads  
 “ them to pry into all my thoughts, and  
 “ whose envy can never suffer Horatio's  
 “ heart to be possessed by any one without  
 “ forcing them into malicious designs against  
 “ the person who is so happy as to possess  
 “ it ! but indeed, if ever envy can possibly  
 “ have any excuse, or even alleviation, it is  
 “ in this case, where the good is so great,  
 “ and it must be equally natural to all to

“ wish it for themselves, nor am I ashamed  
 “ to own it: and to your merit, Horatio, I  
 “ am obliged, that prevents my being in that  
 “ most uneasy of all the situations I can fi-  
 “ gure in my imagination, of being led by  
 “ inclination to love the person whom my  
 “ own judgment forces me to condemn.”

Matters were in so great forwardness be-  
 tween this fond couple, that the day was fix-  
 ed for their marriage, and was now within  
 a fortnight, when the sessions chanced to be  
 held for that county in a town about twenty  
 miles distance from that which is the scene of  
 our story. It seems it is usual for the young  
 gentlemen of the bar to repair to these sessions,  
 not so much for the sake of profit, as to shew  
 their parts, and learn the law of the justices  
 of peace: for which purpose one of the wisest  
 and gravest of all the justices is appointed  
 speaker or chairman, as they modestly call it,  
 and he reads them a lecture, and instructs  
 them in the true knowledge of the law.

‘ You are here guilty of a little mistake,’  
 says Adams, ‘ which, if you please I will  
 ‘ correct; I have attended at one of these  
 ‘ quarter sessions, where I observed the coun-  
 ‘ sel taught the justices, instead of learning  
 ‘ any thing of them.’

It is not very material, said the lady. Hi-  
 ther repaired Horatio, who as he hoped by



his profession to advance his fortune, which was not at present very large, for the sake of his dear Leonora, he resolved to spare no pains, nor lose any opportunity of improving or advancing himself in it.

The same afternoon in which he left the town, as Leonora stood at her window, a coach and six passed by; which she declared to be the compleatest, genteelest, prettiest equipage she ever saw; adding these remarkable words, ‘ O I am in love with that equipage!’ which though her friend Flarella at that time did not greatly regard, she hath since remembered.

In the evening an assembly was held, which Leonora honoured with their company: but intended to pay her dear Horatio the compliment of refusing to dance in his absence.

O why have not women as good resolution to maintain their vows, as they have often good inclinations in making them!

The gentleman who owned the coach and six came to the assembly. His clothes were as remarkably fine as his equipage could be. He soon attracted the eyes of the company; all the smarts, all the silk waistcoats with silver and gold edgings, were eclipsed in an instant.

‘ Madam,’ said Adams, ‘ if it be not im-

‘pertinent, I should be glad to know how  
‘this gentleman was dressed?’

Sir, answered the lady, I have been told he had on a cut velvet coat of a cinnamon colour, lined with a pink satten, embroidered all over with gold; his waistcoat, which was cloth of silver, was embroidered with gold likewise. I cannot be particular as to the rest of his dress: but it was all in the French fashion; for Bellarmine (that was his name) was just arrived from Paris.

This fine figure did not more entirely engage the eyes of every lady in the assembly, than Leonora did his. He had scarce beheld her, but he stood motionless and fixed as a statue, or at least would have done so, if good breeding had permitted him. However, he carried it so far, before he had power to correct himself, that every person in the room easily discovered where his admiration was settled. The other ladies began to single out their former partners, all perceiving who would be Bellarmine’s choice; which they however endeavoured, by all possible means, to prevent: many of them saying to Leonora, ‘O Madam, I suppose we shan’t have  
‘the pleasure of seeing you dance to-night;’ and then crying out in Bellarmine’s hearing, ‘O Leonora will not dance, I assure you;  
‘her partner is not here.’ One maliciously

attempted to prevent her, by sending a disagreeable fellow to ask her, that so she might be obliged either to dance with him, or sit down: but this scheme proved abortive.

Leonora saw herself admired by the fine stranger, and envied by every woman present. Her little heart began to flutter within her, and her head was agitated with a convulsive motion; she seemed as if she would speak to several of her acquaintance, but had nothing to say: for as she would not mention her present triumph, so she could not disengage her thoughts one moment from the contemplation of it: she had never tasted any thing like this happiness. She had before known what it was to torment a single woman; but to be hated and secretly cursed by a whole assembly, was a joy reserved for this blessed moment. As this vast profusion of ecstasy had confounded her understanding, so there was nothing so foolish as her behaviour; she played a thousand childish tricks, distorted her person into several shapes, and her face into several laughs, without any reason. In a word, her carriage was as absurd as her desires, which were, to affect an insensibility of the stranger's admiration, and at the same time a triumph, from that admiration, over every woman in the room.

In this temper of mind, Bellarmine having

enquired who she was, advanced to her, and with a low bow begged the honour of dancing with her, which she with as low a curtesy immediately granted. She danced with him all night, and enjoyed perhaps the highest pleasure that she was capable of feeling.

At these words, Adams fetched a deep groan, which frightened the ladies, who told him, 'they hoped he was not ill.' He answered, 'he groaned only for the folly of Leonora.'

Leonora retired, (continued the Lady) about six in the morning, but not to rest. She tumbled and tossed in her bed, with very short intervals of sleep, and those entirely filled with dreams of the equipage and fine clothes she had seen, and the balls, operas, and ridottos, which had been the subject of their conversation.

In the afternoon, Bellarmine, in the dear coach and six, came to wait on her. He was indeed charmed with her person, and was, on enquiry, so well pleased with the circumstances of her father, (for he himself, notwithstanding all his finery, was not quite so rich as Cræsus or an Attalus.) 'Attalus,' says Mr Adams: 'but pray how came you acquainted with these names?' The Lady smiled at the question, and proceeded—He was so pleased, I say, that he resolved to

make his addressees to her directly. He did so accordingly, and that with so much warmth and briskness, that he quickly baffled her weak repulses, and obliged the lady to refer him to her father, who, she knew, would quickly declare in favour of a coach and six.

Thus, what Horatio had by sighs and tears, love and tenderness, been so long obtaining, the French English Bellarmine with gaiety and gallantry possessed himself of in an instant. In other words, what modesty had employed a full year in raising, impudence demolished in twenty-four hours.

Here Adams groaned a second time; but the ladies, who began to smoke him, took no notice.

From the opening of the assembly till the end of Bellarmine's visit, Leonora had scarce once thought of Horatio; but he now began, though an unwelcome guest, to enter into her mind. She wished she had seen the charming Bellarmine and his charming equipage, before matters had gone so far. 'Yet why,' says she, 'should I wish to have seen him before? or what signifies it that I have seen him now? is not Horatio my lover? almost my husband? is he not as handsome, nay handsomer than Bellarmine? Ay, but Bellarmine is the genteeler



## 182 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ and the finer man; yes, that he must be  
‘ allowed. Yes, yes, he is that certainly.  
‘ But did not I no longer ago than yesterday  
‘ love Horatio more than all the world?  
‘ Ay, but yesterday I had not seen Bellar-  
‘ mine. But doth not Horatio doat on me,  
‘ and may he not in despair break his heart  
‘ if I abandon him? Well, and hath not  
‘ Bellarmine a heart to break too? Yes, but  
‘ I promised Horatio first; but that was poor  
‘ Bellarmine’s misfortune; if I had seen him  
‘ first, I should certainly have preferred him.  
‘ Did not the dear creature prefer me to  
‘ every woman in the assembly, when every  
‘ She was laying out for him? when was it  
‘ in Horatio’s power to give me such an in-  
‘ stance of affection? Can he give me an  
‘ equipage, or any of those things which  
‘ Bellarmine will make me mistress of? how  
‘ vast is the difference between being the  
‘ wife of a poor counsellor, and the wife of  
‘ one of Bellarmine’s fortune? If I marry  
‘ Horatio, I shall triumph over no more than  
‘ one rival; but by marrying Bellarmine, I  
‘ shall be the envy of all my acquaintance.  
‘ What happiness!—But can I suffer Ho-  
‘ ratio to die? for he hath sworn he cannot  
‘ survive my loss: but perhaps he may not  
‘ die; if he should, can I prevent it? must I  
‘ sacrifice myself to him? besides, Bellar-



‘ mine may be as miserable for me too.’ She was thus arguing with herself, when some young ladies called her to the walks, and a little relieved her anxiety for the present.

The next morning Bellarmine breakfasted with her in presence of her aunt, whom he sufficiently informed of his passion for Leonora. He was no sooner withdrawn, than the old lady began to advise her niece on this occasion——‘ You see, child,’ says she, ‘ what fortune hath thrown in your way; and I hope you will not withstand your own preferment.’ Leonora sighing, begged her not to mention any such thing, when she knew her engagements to Horatio. ‘ Engagements to a fig,’ cried the aunt; ‘ you should thank Heaven on your knees, that you have it yet in your power to break them. Will any woman hesitate a moment, whether she shall ride in a coach, or walk on foot all the days of her life?—— But Bellarmine drives six, and Horatio not even a pair.’ ‘ Yes, but, Madam, what will the world say?’ answered Leonora; ‘ will not they condemn me?’ ‘ The world is always on the side of prudence,’ cries the aunt, ‘ and would surely condemn you, if you sacrificed your interest to any motive whatever. O I know the world very well;

‘ and you show your ignorance, my dear,  
 ‘ by your objection. O’ my conscience !  
 ‘ the world is wiser. I have lived longer  
 ‘ in it than you; and I assure you there is  
 ‘ not any thing worth our regard besides  
 ‘ money; nor did I ever know any one per-  
 ‘ son who married from other considerations,  
 ‘ who did not afterwards heartily repent it.  
 ‘ Besides, if we examine the two men, can  
 ‘ you prefer a sneaking fellow who hath been  
 ‘ bred at the university, to a fine gentleman  
 ‘ just come from his travels?—All the world  
 ‘ must allow Bellarmine to be a fine gentle-  
 ‘ man, positively a fine gentleman, and a  
 ‘ handsome man.’ ‘ Perhaps, Madam, I  
 ‘ should not doubt, if I knew how to be  
 ‘ handsomely off with the other.’ ‘ O leave  
 ‘ that to me,’ says the aunt. ‘ You know  
 ‘ your father hath not been acquainted with  
 ‘ the affair. Indeed, for my part, I thought  
 ‘ it might do well enough, not dreaming of  
 ‘ such an offer; but I’ll disengage you;  
 ‘ leave me to give the fellow an answer. I  
 ‘ warrant you shall have no farther trouble.’

Leonora was at length satisfied with her  
 aunt’s reasoning; and Bellarmine supping  
 with her that evening, it was agreed he should  
 the next morning go to her father and pro-  
 pose the match, which she consented should  
 be consummated at his return.

The aunt retired soon after supper, and the lovers being left together, Bellarmine began in the following manner: ‘ Yes, Madam, this coat I assure you was made at Paris, and I defy the best English tailor even to imitate it. There is not one of them can cut, Madam, they can’t cut. If you observe how this skirt is turned, and this sleeve, a clumsy English rascal can do nothing like it.—Pray how do you like my liveries?’ Leonora answered, ‘ she thought them very pretty.’ ‘ All French,’ says he, ‘ I assure you, except the great coats; I never trust any thing more than a great coat to an Englishman; you know one must encourage our own people what one can, especially as, before I had a place, I was in the country interest, he, he, he! but for myself, I would see the dirty island at the bottom of the sea, rather than wear a single rag of English work about me; and I am sure, after you have made one tour to Paris, you will be of the same opinion with regard to your own cloaths. You can’t conceive what an addition a French dress would be to your beauty; I positively assure you, at the first opera I saw since I came over, I mistook the English ladies for chambermaids, he, he, he!’

With such sort of polite discourse did the



gay Bellarmine entertain his beloved Leonora, when the door opened on a sudden, and Horatio entered the room. Here 'tis impossible to express the surprize of Leonora.

' Poor woman,' says Mrs Slipflop, ' what a terrible quandary she must be in !' ' Not at all,' says Miss Grave-airs, ' such sluts can never be confounded.' ' She must have then more than Corinthian assurance,' said Adams; ' aye, more than Lais herself.'

A long silence, continued the lady, prevailed in the whole company. If the familiar entrance of Horatio struck the greatest astonishment into Bellarmine, the unexpected presence of Bellarmine no less surprized Horatio. At length Leonora, collecting all the spirit she was mistress of, addressed herself to the latter, and pretended to wonder at the reason of so late a visit. ' I should, indeed,' answered he, ' have made some apology for disturbing you at this hour, had not my finding you in company assured me I do not break in upon your repose.' Bellarmine rose from his chair, traversed the room in a minuet step, and humm'd an opera tune, while Horatio, advancing to Leonora, asked her in a whisper, if that gentleman was not a relation of hers; to which she answered with a smile, or rather sneer, ' No, he is no relation of mine yet;' adding, ' she could

' not guess the meaning of his question.'  
 Horatio told her softly, ' it did not arise  
 ' from jealousy.' ' Jealousy! I assure you,  
 ' it would be very strange in a common ac-  
 ' quaintance to give himself any of those  
 ' airs.' These words a little surprized Ho-  
 ratio; but before he had time to answer,  
 Bellarmine danced up to the lady, and told  
 her, ' he feared he interrupted some business  
 ' between her and the gentleman.' ' I can  
 ' have no business,' said she, ' with the gen-  
 ' tleman, nor any other, which need be any  
 ' secret to you.'

' You'll pardon me,' said Horatio, ' if I  
 ' desire to know who this gentleman is, who  
 ' is to be entrusted with all our secrets.'  
 ' You'll know soon enough,' cries Leonora;  
 ' but I can't guess what secrets can ever pass  
 ' between us of such mighty consequence.'  
 ' No, Madam!' cries Horatio, ' I'm sure  
 ' you would not have me understand you in  
 ' earnest.' ' 'Tis indifferent to me,' says she,  
 ' how you understand me; but I think so  
 ' unseasonable a visit is difficult to be under-  
 ' stood at all, at least when people find one  
 ' engaged; though one's servants do not deny  
 ' one, one may expect a well-bred person  
 ' should soon take the hint.' ' Madam,'  
 said Horatio, ' I did not imagine any en-  
 ' gagement with a stranger, as it seems this

‘ gentleman is, would have made my visit  
 ‘ impertinent, or that any such ceremonies  
 ‘ were to be preserved between persons in  
 ‘ our situation.’ ‘ Sure you are in a dream,’  
 said she, ‘ or would persuade me that I am  
 ‘ in one. I know no pretensions a common  
 ‘ acquaintance can have to lay aside the ce-  
 ‘ remonies of good breeding.’ ‘ Sure,’ said  
 he, ‘ I am in a dream; for it is impossible I  
 ‘ should be really esteemed a common ac-  
 ‘ quaintance by Leonora, after what has  
 ‘ passed between us!’ ‘ Passed between us!  
 ‘ Do you intend to affront me before this  
 ‘ gentleman?’ ‘ D—n me, affront the lady,’  
 says Bellarmine, cocking his hat, and strut-  
 ting up to Horatio, ‘ does any man dare  
 ‘ affront this lady before me, d—n me?’  
 ‘ Harkee, Sir,’ says Horatio, ‘ I would advise  
 ‘ you to lay aside that fierce air; for I am  
 ‘ mightily deceived, if this lady has not a  
 ‘ violent desire to get your worship a good  
 ‘ drubbing.’ ‘ Sir,’ said Bellarmine, ‘ I have  
 ‘ the honour to be her protector, and d---n  
 ‘ me, if I understand your meaning.’ ‘ Sir,’  
 answered Horatio, ‘ she is rather your pro-  
 ‘ tectress: but give yourself no more airs,  
 ‘ for you see I am prepared for you,’ (shaking  
 his whip at him) ‘ Oh! *Serviteur tres humble,*’  
 says Bellarmine, ‘ *je vous entend parfait-*  
 ‘ *ment bien.*’ At which time the aunt, who



had heard of Horatio's visit, entered the room, and soon satisfied all his doubts. She convinced him that he was never more awake in his life, and that nothing more extraordinary had happened in his three days absence, than a small alteration in the affections of Leonora; who now burst into tears, and wondered what reason she had given him to use her in so barbarous a manner. Horatio desired Bellarmine to withdraw with him: but the ladies prevented it, by laying violent hands on the latter; upon which, the former took his leave without any great ceremony, and departed, leaving the lady with his rival to consult for his safety, which Leonora feared her indiscretion might have endangered: but the aunt comforted her with assurances, that Horatio would not venture his person against so accomplished a cavalier as Bellarmine; and that, being a lawyer, he would seek revenge in his own way, and the most they had to apprehend from him was an action.

They at length therefore agreed to permit Bellarmine to retire to his lodgings, having first settled all matters relating to the journey which he was to undertake in the morning, and their preparations for the nuptials at his return.

But alas! as wise men have observed, the

feat of valour is not the countenance; and many a grave and plain man, will, on a just provocation, betake himself to that mischievous metal, cold iron; while men of a fiercer brow, and sometimes with that emblem of courage, a cockade, will more prudently decline it.

Leonora was waked in the morning, from a visionary coach and fix, with the dismal account, that Bellarmine was run through the body by Horatio; that he lay languishing at an inn, and the surgeons had declared the wound mortal. She immediately leaped out of the bed, danced about the room in a frantic manner, tore her hair, and beat her breast in all the agonies of despair; in which sad condition her aunt, who likewise arose at the news, found her. The good old lady applied her utmost art to comfort her niece. She told her, ‘ while there was life there was  
 ‘ hope; but that if he should die, her affliction would be of no service to Bellarmine,  
 ‘ and would only expose herself, which might  
 ‘ probably keep her some time without any  
 ‘ future offer; that as matters had happened,  
 ‘ her wisest way would be to think no more  
 ‘ of Bellarmine, but to endeavour to regain  
 ‘ the affections of Horatio.’ ‘ Speak not to  
 ‘ me,’ cried the disconsolate Leonora; ‘ is it not  
 ‘ owing to me, that poor Bellarmine has lost

' his life ? have not these cursed charms' (at  
 ' which words she looked stedfastly in the  
 ' glass) ' been the ruin of the most charming  
 ' man of this age ? Can I ever bear to con-  
 ' template my own face again ?' (with her  
 eyes still fixed on the glass ? ' Am I not the  
 ' murderers of the finest gentleman ? No  
 ' other woman in the town could have made  
 ' any impression on him.' ' Never think of  
 ' things past,' cries the aunt, ' think of re-  
 ' gaining the affections of Horatio.' ' What  
 ' reason,' said the niece, ' have I to hope he  
 ' would forgive me ? No, I have lost him as  
 ' well as the other, and it was your wicked  
 ' advice which was the occasion of all ; you  
 ' seduced me, contrary to my inclinations, to  
 ' abandon poor Horatio,' at which words  
 she burst into tears ; ' you prevailed upon  
 ' me, whether I would or no, to give up my  
 ' affections for him ; had it not been for you,  
 ' Bellarmine never would have entered into  
 ' my thoughts ; had not his addresses been  
 ' backed by your persuasions, they never  
 ' would have made any impression on me ; I  
 ' should have defied all the fortune and equi-  
 ' page in the world ; but it was you, it was  
 ' you, who got the better of my youth and  
 ' simplicity, and forced me to lose my dear  
 ' Horatio for ever.'

The aunt was almost borne down with

this torrent of words; she however rallied all the strength she could, and drawing her mouth up in a pucker, began: I am not surprised, niece, at this ingratitude. Those who advise young women for their interest, must always expect such a return: I am convinced my brother will thank me for breaking off your match with Horatio at any rate.' 'That may not be in your power yet,' answered Leonora; 'though, it is very ungrateful in you to desire or attempt it, after the presents you have received from him.' (For, indeed, true it is, that many presents, and some pretty valuable ones, had passed from Horatio to the old lady: but as true it is, that Bellarmine, when he breakfasted with her and her niece, had complimented her with a brilliant from his finger, of much greater value than all she had touched of the other.)

The aunt's gall was on float to reply, when a servant brought a letter into the room; which Leonora, hearing it came from Bellarmine, with great eagerness opened, and read as follows:

" Most divine creature,

" **T**HE wound which I fear you have  
 " heard I received from my rival, is  
 " not like to be so fatal as those shot into

“ my heart, which have been fired from your  
 “ eyes, *tout-brilliant*. Those are the only  
 “ cannons by which I am to fall: for my  
 “ surgeon gives me hopes of being soon able  
 “ to attend your Ruelle; till when, unless  
 “ you would do me an honour which I have  
 “ scarce the hardiessè to think of, your ab-  
 “ sence will be the greatest anguish can be  
 “ felt by,

“ Madam,

“ *Avec tout le respecté* in the world.

“ Your most obedient, most absolute

“ *Devoté,*

“ BELLARMINE.”

As soon as Leonora perceived such hopes of Bellarmine's recovery, and that the gossip Fame had, according to custom, so enlarged his danger, she presently abandoned all further thoughts of Horatio, and was soon reconciled to her aunt, who received her again into favour, with a more Christian forgiveness than we generally meet with. Indeed, it is possible, she might be a little alarmed at the hints which her niece had given her concerning the presents. She might apprehend such rumours, should they get abroad, might injure a reputation, which, by frequenting church twice a-day, and preserving the utmost rigour and strictness in her countenance



and behaviour for many years, she had established.

Leonora's passion returned now for Bellarmine with greater force after its small relaxation than ever. She proposed to her aunt to make him a visit in his confinement, which the old lady, with great and commendable prudence, advised her to decline: 'For,' says she, 'should any accident intervene to prevent your intended match, too forward a behaviour with this lover may injure you in the eyes of others. Every woman, till she is married, ought to consider of and provide against the possibility of the affair's breaking off.' Leonora said, she should be indifferent to whatever might happen in such a case; for she had now so absolutely placed her affections on this dear man, (so she called him) that, if it was her misfortune to lose him, she should for ever abandon all thoughts of mankind. She therefore resolved to visit him, notwithstanding all the prudent advice of her aunt to the contrary, and that very afternoon executed her resolution.

The Lady was proceeding in her story, when the coach drove into the inn where the company were to dine, sorely to the dissatisfaction of Mr Adams, whose ears were the most hungry part about him; he being, as the reader may perhaps guess, of an insatiable



curiosity, and heartily desirous of hearing the end of this amour, though he professed he could scarce wish success to a lady of so inconstant a disposition.

## C H A P. V.

*A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams.*

AS soon as the passengers had alighted from the coach, Mr Adams, as was his custom; made directly to the kitchen, where he found Joseph sitting by the fire, and the hostess anointing his leg: for the horse which Mr Adams had borrowed of his clerk, had so violent a propensity to kneeling, that one would have thought it had been his trade as well as his master's: nor would he always give any notice of such his intention: he was often found on his knees, when the rider least expected it. This foible, however, was of no great inconvenience to the parson, who was accustomed to it, and as his legs almost touched the ground when he bestrode the beast, had but a little way to fall, and threw himself forward on such occasions with so much dexterity, that he never received any mischief; the horse and he frequently rolling many paces distance, and afterwards both

196 THE ADVENTURES OF

getting up and meeting as good friends as ever.

Poor Joseph, who had not been used to such kind of cattle, though an excellent horseman, did not so happily disengage himself; but falling with his leg under the beast, received a violent contusion, to which the good woman was, as we have said, applying a warm hand, with some camphorated spirits, just at the time when the parson entered the kitchen.

He had scarce expressed his concern for Joseph's misfortune, before the host likewise entered. He was by no means of Mr Towwouse's gentle disposition, and was indeed perfect master of his house, and every thing in it but his guests.

This surly fellow, who always proportioned his respect to the appearance of a traveller, from, GOD bless your honour, down to plain, Coming presently, observing his wife on her knees to a footman, cried out, without considering his circumstances, 'What a pox is the woman about? why don't you mind the company in the coach? Go and ask them what they will have for dinner?' 'My dear,' says she, 'you know they can have nothing but what is at the fire, which will be ready presently; and really the poor young man's leg is very much bruised.' At which words she fell to chafing more vio-

lently than before: the bell then happening to ring, he damn'd his wife, and bid her go in to the company, and not stand rubbing there all day: for he did not believe the young fellow's leg was so bad as he pretended; and if it was, within twenty miles he would find a surgeon to cut it off. Upon these words, Adams fetched two strides across the room; and snapping his fingers over his head, muttered aloud, 'He would excommunicate such a wretch for a farthing; for he believed the devil had more humanity.' These words occasioned a dialogue between Adams and the host, in which there were two or three sharp replies, till Joseph bade the latter know how to behave himself to his betters. At which the host (having first strictly surveyed Adams) scornfully repeating the word betters, flew into a rage, and telling Joseph he was as able to walk out of his house as he had been to walk into it, offered to lay violent hands on him; which Adams perceiving, dealt him so sound a compliment over his face with his fist, that the blood immediately gushed out of his nose in a stream. The host being unwilling to be outdone in courtesy, especially by a person of Adams's figure, returned the favour with so much gratitude, that the parson's nostrils began to look a little redder than usual. Upon which

## 198 THE ADVENTURES OF

he again assailed his antagonist, and with another stroke laid him sprawling on the floor.

The hostess, who was a better wife than so furly a husband deserved, seeing her husband all bloody and stretched along, hastened presently to his assistance, or rather to revenge the blow, which, to all appearance, was the last he would ever receive; when, lo! a pan full of hog's blood, which unluckily stood on the dresser, presented itself first to her hands. She seized it in her fury, and without any reflection, discharged it into the parson's face, and with so good an aim, that much the greater part first saluted his countenance, and trickled thence in so large a current down to his beard, and over his garments, that a more horrible spectacle was hardly to be seen, or even imagined. All which was perceived by Mrs Slipflop, who entered the kitchen at that instant. This good gentlewoman, not being of a temper so extremely cool and patient as perhaps was required to ask many questions on this occasion, flew with great impetuosity at the hostess's cap, which, together with some of her hair, she plucked from her head in a moment, giving her at the same time several hearty cuffs in the face, which, by frequent practice on the inferior servants, she had learned an

excellent knack of delivering with a good grace. Poor Joseph could hardly rise from his chair; the parson was employed in wiping the blood from his eyes, which had entirely blinded him, and the landlord was but just beginning to stir, whilst Mrs Slipflop, holding down the landlady's face with her left hand, made so dextrous an use of her right, that the poor woman began to roar in a key which alarmed all the company in the inn.

There happened to be in the inn at this time, besides the ladies who arrived in the stage-coach, the two gentlemen who were present at Mr Tow-wouse's when Joseph was detained for his horse's meat, and whom we have before-mentioned to have stopped at the ale-house with Adams. There was likewise a gentleman just arrived from his travels to Italy; all whom the horrid outcry of murder presently brought into the kitchen, where the several combatants were found in the postures already described.

It was now no difficulty to put an end to the fray, the conquerors being satisfied with the vengeance they had taken, and the conquered having no appetite to renew the fight. The principal figure, and which engaged the eyes of all, was Adams, who was all over covered with blood, which the whole com-



pany concluded to be his own: and consequently imagined him to be no longer for this world. But the host, who had now recovered from his blow, and was risen from the ground, soon delivered them from this apprehension, by damning his wife for wasting the hog's puddings, and telling her all would have been very well, if she had not intermeddled like a b—— as she was; adding, he was very glad the gentlewoman had paid her, though not half what she had deserved. The poor woman had indeed fared much the worst, having, besides the unmerciful cuffs received, lost a quantity of hair, which Mrs. Slipflop in triumph held in her left hand.

The traveller, addressing himself to Mrs. Grave-airs, desired her not to be frightened; for there had been only a little boxing, which he said, to their *disgracia*, the English were *accustomata* to: adding, it must be however a fight somewhat strange to him, who was just come from Italy, the Italians not being addicted to the *cuffardo*, but *bastonza*, says he. He then went up to Adams, and telling him he looked like the ghost of Othello, bid him not shake his gory locks at him, for he could not say he did it. Adams very innocently answered, 'Sir, I am far from accusing you.' He then returned to the lady, and cried, 'I find the bloody gentleman is

\* \* \*



‘ *uno insipido del nullo senso. Dammata di me, if I have seen fuch a *spectacule* in my way from Viterbo.*’

One of the gentlemen having learned from the host the occasion of this bustle, and being assured by him that Adams had struck the first blow, whispered in his ear, he’d warrant he would recover. ‘ Recover, master,’ said the host, smiling: ‘ yes, yes, I am not afraid of dying with a blow or two neither; I am not such a chicken as that.’ ‘ Pugh!’ said the gentleman, ‘ I mean you will recover damages in that action, which undoubtedly you intend to bring, as soon as a writ can be returned from London; for you look like a man of too much spirit and courage to suffer any one to beat you without bringing your action against him: he must be a scandalous fellow indeed, who would put up a drubbing, whilst the law is open to revenge it; besides, he hath drawn blood from you, and spoiled your coat; and the jury will give damages for that too. An excellent new coat upon my word, and now not worth a shilling!’

‘ I don’t care,’ continued he, ‘ to intermeddle in these cases: but you have a right to my evidence; and if I am sworn, I must speak the truth. I saw you sprawling on the floor, and the blood gushing from your

‘ nostrils. You may take your own opinion;  
‘ but was I in your circumstances, every  
‘ drop of my blood should convey an ounce  
‘ of gold into my pocket; remember I don’t  
‘ advise you to go to law; but if your jury  
‘ were Christians, they must give swinging  
‘ damages. That’s all.’ ‘ Master,’ cry’d the  
host, scratching his head, ‘ I have no stomach  
‘ to law, I thank you. I have seen enough  
‘ of that in the parish, where two of my  
‘ neighbours have been at law about a house,  
‘ till they have both lawed themselves into a  
‘ goal.’ At which words he turned about,  
and began to enquire again after his hog’s  
puddings; nor would it probably have been  
a sufficient excuse for his wife, that she spilt  
them in his defence, had not some awe of  
the company, especially of the Italian tra-  
veller, who was a person of great dignity,  
with-held his rage. Whilst one of the above-  
mentioned gentlemen was employed, as we  
have seen him, on the behalf of the landlord,  
the other was no less hearty on the side of  
Mr Adams, whom he advised to bring his  
action immediately. He said, the assault of  
the wife was in law the assault of the husband;  
for they were but one person; and he was  
liable to pay damages, which he said must be  
considerable, where so bloody a disposition ap-  
peared. Adams answered, if it was true that

---

they were but one person, he had assaulted the wife; for he was sorry to own he had struck the husband the first blow. ‘ I am  
 ‘ sorry you own it too,’ cries the gentleman;  
 ‘ for it could not possibly appear to the court:  
 ‘ for here was no evidence present but the  
 ‘ lame man in the chair, whom I suppose to  
 ‘ be your friend, and would consequently  
 ‘ say nothing but what made for you.’  
 ‘ How, Sir,’ says Adams, ‘ do you take me  
 ‘ for a villain, who would prosecute revenge  
 ‘ in cold blood, and use unjustifiable means  
 ‘ to obtain it? If you knew me and my order,  
 ‘ I should think you affronted both.’ At  
 the word order, the gentleman stared, (for  
 he was too bloody to be of any modern order  
 of knights), and turning hastily about, said,  
 ‘ Every man knew his own business.’

Matters being now composed, the company retired to their several apartments, the two gentlemen congratulating each other on the success of their good offices, in procuring a perfect reconciliation between the contending parties; and the traveller went to his rest, crying, as the Italian poet says,

‘ *Je voi very well, que tuta e pace,*

‘ So send up dinner, good Boniface.’

The coachman began now to grow importunate with his passengers, whose entrance

into the coach was retarded by Miss Grave-airs insisting, against the remonstrance of all the rest, that she would not admit a footman into the coach; for poor Joseph was too lame to mount a horse. A young lady, who was, as it seems, an Earl's grand-daughter, begged it with tears in her eyes. Mr Adams prayed, and Mrs Slipflop scolded, but all to no purpose. She said she would not demean herself to ride with a footman: that there were waggons on the road: that if the master of the coach desired it, she would pay for two places, but would suffer no such fellow to come in. 'Madam,' says Slipflop, 'I am sure no one can refuse another coming into a stage-coach.' 'I don't know,' 'Madam,' says the Lady, 'I am not much used to stage-coaches, I seldom travel in them.' 'That may be, Madam,' replied Slipflop, 'very good people do, and some people's betters, for aught I know.' Miss Grave-airs said, Some folks might sometimes give their tongues a liberty, to some people that were their betters, which did not become them; for her part, she was not used to converse with servants. Slipflop returned, Some people kept no servants to converse with: for her part, she thanked Heaven she lived in a family where there were a great many; and had more under her own com-

mand, than any paultry little gentlewoman in the kingdom. Miss Grave-airs cried, She believed her mistress would not encourage such sauciness to her betters. ‘ My betters,’ says Slipflop, ‘ who is my betters, pray?’ ‘ I am your betters,’ answered Miss Grave-airs, ‘ and I will acquaint your Mistress.’——At which Mistress Slipflop laughed aloud, and told her, her lady was one of the great gentry, and such little paultry gentlewomen, as some folks who travelled in stage-coaches, would not easily come at her.

This smart dialogue between some people and some folks, was going on at the coach door, when a solemn person riding into the inn, and seeing Miss Grave-airs, immediately accosted her with, ‘ Dear child, how do you!’ She presently answered, ‘ O! papa, I am glad you have overtaken me.’ ‘ So am I,’ answered he: ‘ for one of our coaches is just at hand: and there being room for you in it, you shall go no farther in the stage, unless you desire it.’ ‘ How can you imagine I should desire it!’ says she; so bidding Slipflop ride with her fellow, if she pleased, she took her father by the hand, who was just alighted, and walked with him into a room.

Adams instantly asked the coachman in a whisper, if he knew who the gentleman was?



The coachman answered, he was now a gentleman, and kept his horse and man; 'but times are altered, master,' said he; 'I remember when he was no better born than myself.' 'Ay! ay!' says Adams. 'My father drove the squire's coach,' answered he, 'when that very man rode postilion: but he is now his steward, and a great gentleman.' Adams then snapped his fingers, and cried, 'He thought she was some such trollop.'

Adams made haste to acquaint Mrs Slipflop with this good news, as he imagined it; but it found a reception different from what he expected. The prudent gentlewoman, who despised the anger of Miss Grave airs, whilst she conceived her the daughter of a gentleman of small fortune, now she heard her alliance with the upper servants of a great family in her neighbourhood, began to fear her interest with the Mistress. She wished she had not carried the dispute so far, and began to think of endeavouring to reconcile herself to the young lady before she left the inn; when luckily the scene at London, which the reader can scarce have forgotten, presented itself to her mind, and comforted her with such assurance, that she no longer apprehended any enemy with her mistress.

Every thing being now adjusted, the company entered the coach, which was just on



its departure, when one lady recollected she had left her fan, a second her gloves, a third a snuff-box, and a fourth a smelling-bottle behind her; to find all which occasioned some delay, and much swearing to the coachman.

As soon as the coach had left the inn, the women altogether fell to the character of Miss Graveairs, whom one of them declared she had suspected to be some low creature, from the beginning of their journey; and another affirmed, had not even the looks of a gentlewoman; a third warranted she was no better than she should be; and turning to the lady who had related the story in the coach, said, ‘ Did you ever hear, Madam, any thing so prudish as her remarks? Well, deliver me from the censoriousness of such a prude.’ The fourth added, ‘ O Madam! all these creatures are censorious: but for my part, I wonder where the wretch was bred; indeed I must own I have seldom conversed with these mean kind of people; so that it may appear stranger to me; but to refuse the general desire of a whole company had something in it so astonishing, that for my part, I own I should hardly believe it, if my own ears had not been witnesses to it.’ ‘ Yes, and so handsome a young fellow,’ cries

Slipslop: ' the woman must have no compulsion in her, I believe she is more of a Turk than a Christian; I am certain, if she had any Christian woman's blood in her veins, the sight of such a young fellow must have warmed it. Indeed there are some wretched, miserable old objects, that turn one's stomach; I should not wonder if she had refused such a one; I am as nice as herself, and should have cared no more than herself for the company of stinking old fellows: but hold up thy head, Joseph, thou art none of those; and she who hath not compulsion for thee is a Myhummetman, and I will maintain it.' This conversation made Joseph uneasy, as well as the ladies; who perceiving the spirits which Mrs Slipslop was in, (for indeed she was not a cup too low), began to fear the consequence; one of them therefore desired the Lady to conclude the story.— ' Ay, Madam,' said Slipslop, ' I beg your Ladyship to give us that story you commensated in the morning;' which request that well-bred woman immediately complied with.

## C H A P. VI.

*Conclusion of the unfortunate jilt.*

**L**EONORA having once broke thro' the bounds which custom and modesty impose on her sex, soon gave an unbridled indulgence to her passion. Her visits to Bel-larmine were more constant, as well as longer, than his surgeon's; in a word, she became absolutely his nurse, made his water-gruel, administered him his medicines, and notwithstanding the prudent advice of her aunt to the contrary, almost entirely resided in her wounded lover's apartment.

The ladies of the town began to take her conduct under consideration; it was the chief topic of discourse at their tea-tables, and was very severely censured by the most part; especially by Lindamira, a lady whose discreet and starch carriage, together with a constant attendance at church three times a-day, had utterly defeated many malicious attacks on her own reputation: for such was the envy that Lindamira's virtue had attracted, that notwithstanding her own strict behaviour, and strict enquiry into the lives of others, she had not been able to escape being the mark of some arrows herself, which however did her no injury; a blessing perhaps

owed by her to the clergy, who were her chief male companions, and with two or three of whom she had been barbarously and unjustly calumniated.

‘Not so unjustly neither, perhaps,’ says Slipflop, ‘for the clergy are men, as well as other folks.’

The extreme delicacy of Lindamira’s virtue was cruelly hurt by those freedoms which Leonora allowed herself: she said, it was an affront to her sex; that she did not imagine it consistent with any woman’s honour to speak to the creature, or to be seen in her company; and that for her part, she should always refuse to dance at an assembly with her, for fear of contamination by taking her by the hand.

But to return to my story: as soon as Beljarmine was recovered, which was somewhat within a month from his receiving the wound, he set out, according to agreement, for Leonora’s father’s, in order to propose the match, and settle all matters with him touching settlements, and the like.

A little before his arrival, the old gentleman had received an intimation of the affair by the following letter; which I can repeat *verbatim*, and which, they say, was written neither by Leonora nor her aunt, though it

was in a woman's hand. The letter was in these words:

“SIR,

“I AM sorry to acquaint you, that your  
 “daughter Leonora hath acted one of  
 “the basest, as well as most simple parts  
 “with a young gentleman to whom she had  
 “engaged herself, and whom she hath, (par-  
 “don the word) jilted for another of infe-  
 “rior fortune, notwithstanding his superior  
 “figure. You may take what measures you  
 “please on this occasion; I have performed  
 “what I thought my duty; as I have, tho’  
 “unknown to you, a very great respect for  
 “your family.”

The old gentleman did not give himself the trouble to answer this kind epistle; nor did he take any notice of it after he had read it, till he saw Bellarmine. He was, to say the truth, one of those fathers who look on children as an unhappy consequence of their youthful pleasures: which as he would have been delighted not to have had attended them, so was he no less pleased with any opportunity to rid himself of the incumbrance. He passed, in the world's language, as an exceeding good father, being not only so rapacious as to rob and plunder all mankind to

the utmost of his power, but even to deny himself the conveniencies and almost necessities of life; which his neighbours attributed to a desire of raising immense fortunes to his children; but in fact it was not so: he heaped up money for its own sake only, and looked on his children as his rivals, who were to enjoy his beloved mistress, when he was incapable of possessing her, and which he would have been much more charmed with the power of carrying along with him: nor had his children any other security of being his heirs, than that the law would constitute them such without a will, and that he had not affection enough for any one living to take the trouble of writing one.

To this gentleman came Bellarmine on the errand I have mentioned. His person, his equipage, his family, and his estate, seemed to the father to make him an advantageous match for his daughter; he therefore very readily accepted his proposals: but when Bellarmine imagined the principal affair concluded, and began to open the incidental matters of fortune, the old gentleman presently changed his countenance, saying, he resolved never to marry his daughter on a Smithfield match; that whoever had love for her to take her, would, when he died, find her share of his fortune in his coffers;



JOSEPH ANDREWS. 213

but he had seen such examples of undutifulness happen from the too early generosity of parents, that he had made a vow never to part with a shilling whilst he lived. He commended the saying of Solomon, "He that spareth the rod spoileth the child:" but added, he might have likewise asserted, that he that spareth the purse saveth the child. He then ran into a discourse on the extravagance of the youth of the age; whence he launched into a dissertation on horses, and came at length to commend those Bellarmine drove. That fine gentleman, who, at another season, would have been well enough pleased to dwell a little on that subject, was now very eager to resume the circumstance of fortune. He said, he had a very high value for the young lady, and would receive her with less than he would any other whatever: but that even his love to her made some regard to worldly matters necessary; for it would be a most distracting sight for him to see her, when he had the honour to be her husband, in less than a coach and six. The old gentleman answered, 'Four will do, four will do;' and then took a turn from horses to extravagance, and from extravagance to horses, till he came round to the equipage again, whither he was no sooner arrived, than Bellarmine brought him back

to the point; but all to no purpose; he made his escape from that subject in a minute; till at last the lover declared, that in the present situation of his affairs, it was impossible for him, though he loved Leonora more than *tout le monde*, to marry her without any fortune. To which the father answered, he was sorry then his daughter must lose so valuable a match; that if he had an inclination, at present it was not in his power to advance a shilling: that he had had great losses, and been at great expences on projects, which though he had great expectation from them, had yet produced him nothing: that he did not know what might happen hereafter, as on the birth of a son, or such accident; but he would make no promise, or enter into any article: for he would not break his vow for all the daughters in the world.

In short, ladies, to keep you no longer in suspense, Bellarmine having tried every argument and persuasion which he could invent, and finding them all ineffectual, at length took his leave, but not in order to return to Leonora; he proceeded directly to his own seat, whence, after a few days stay, he returned to Paris, to the great delight of the French, and the honour of the English nation.

But as soon as he arrived at his home, he presently dispatched a messenger with the following epistle to Leonora.

“ Adorable and Charmante,

“ I AM sorry to have the honour to tell  
 “ you I am not the *heureux* person de-  
 “ stined for your divine arms. Your papa  
 “ hath told me so with a *politesse* not often  
 “ seen on this side Paris. You may perhaps  
 “ guess his manner of refusing me—*Ab mon*  
 “ *dieu!* You will certainly believe me, Ma-  
 “ dam, incapable myself of delivering this  
 “ *triste* message, which I intend to try the  
 “ French air to cure the consequences of---  
 “ *A jamais! Cœur! Ange!---Au diable!---*  
 “ If your Papa obliges you to a marriage,  
 “ I hope we shall see you at Paris, till when  
 “ the wind that blows from thence will be  
 “ the warmest *dans la monde*: for it will  
 “ consist almost entirely of my sighs. *Adieu*  
 “ *ma princesse! Ab l’amour!*

BELLARMINE.”

I shall not attempt, ladies, to describe Leonora’s condition when she received this letter. It is a picture of horror, which I should have had as little pleasure in drawing as you in beholding. She immediately left the place, where she was the subject of con-

versation and ridicule, and retired to that house I shewed you when I began the story; where she hath ever since led a disconsolate life, and deserves perhaps pity for her misfortunes, more than our censure for a behaviour to which the artifices of her aunt very probably contributed, and to which very young women are often rendered too liable by that blameable levity in the education of our sex.

‘ If I was inclined to pity her,’ said a young lady in the coach, ‘ it would be for the loss of Horatio; for I cannot discern any misfortune in her missing such a husband as Bellarmine.’

‘ Why, I must own,’ says Slipflop, ‘ the gentleman was a little false-hearted: but howsomever it was hard to have two lovers, and get never a husband at all. But pray, Madam, what became of our *Our-asho?*’

He remains, said the lady, still unmarried, and hath applied himself so strictly to his business, that he hath raised, I hear, a very considerable fortune. And what is remarkable, they say, he never hears the name of Leonora without a sigh, nor hath ever uttered one syllable to charge her with her ill conduct towards him.

## C H A P. VII.

*A very short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way.*

THE lady having finished her story, received the thanks of the company; and now Joseph, putting his head out of the coach, cried out, 'Never believe me, if you der be not our parson Adams walking along without his horse.' 'On my word, and so he is,' says Slipflop; 'and as sure as two-pence, he hath left him behind at the inn.' Indeed, true it is, the parson had exhibited a fresh instance of his absence of mind: for he was so pleased with having got Joseph into the coach, that he never once thought of the beast in the stable; and finding his legs as nimble as he desired, he sallied out brandishing a crab-stick, and had kept on before the coach, mending and slackening his pace occasionally, so that he had never been much more or less than a quarter of a mile distant from it.

Mrs Slipflop desired the coachman to overtake him, which he attempted, but in vain: for the faster he drove, the faster ran the parson, often crying out, 'Ay, ay, catch me if you can:' till at length the coachman ~~favore~~ he would as soon attempt to drive af-

ter a greyhound; and giving the parson two or three hearty curses, he cried, 'Softly, softly, boys,' to his horses, which the civil beasts immediately obeyed.

But we will be more courteous to our reader than he was to Mrs Slipslop; and leaving the coach and its company to pursue their journey, we will carry our reader on after Adams, who stretched forwards without once looking behind him; till having left the coach full three miles in his rear, he came to a place, where, by keeping the extreme tract to the right, it was just barely possible for a human creature to miss his way. This tract however did he keep, as indeed he had a wonderful capacity at these kinds of bare possibilities; and travelling in it about three miles over the plain, he arrived at the summit of a hill, whence, looking a great way backwards, and perceiving no coach in sight, he sat himself down on the turf, and pulling out his *Æschylus*, determined to wait here for its arrival.

He had not sat long here, before a gun going off very near, a little startled him; he looked up, and saw a gentleman within a hundred paces taking up a partridge, which he had just shot.

Adams stood up, and presented a figure to the gentleman which would have moved



laughter in many: for his cassock had just again fallen down below his great coat, that is to say, it reached his knees; whereas, the skirts of his great coat descended no lower than half way down his thighs: but the gentleman's mirth gave way to his surprize, at beholding such a personage in such a place.

Adams, advancing to the gentleman, told him he hoped he had good sport; to which the other answered, 'Very little.' 'I see,' says Adams, 'you have snote one partridge;' to which the sportsman made no reply, but proceeded to charge his piece.

Whilst the gun was charging, Adams remained in silence, which he at last broke, by observing, that it was a delightful evening. The gentleman, who had at first sight conceived a very distasteful opinion of the parson, began, on perceiving a book in his hand, and smocking likewise the information of the cassock, to change his thoughts, and made a small advance to conversation on his side, by saying, 'Sir, I suppose you are not one of these parts?'

Adams immediately told him, No: that he was a traveller, and invited by the beauty of the evening and the place to repose a little and amuse himself with reading. 'I may as well repose myself too,' said the sports-

man; 'for I have been out this whole after-noon, and the devil a bird have I seen till I came hither.'

'Perhaps then the game is not very plenty hereabouts,' cries Adams. 'No, Sir,' said the gentleman; 'the soldiers, who are quartered in the neighbourhood, have killed it all.' 'It is very probable,' cries Adams; 'for shooting is their profession.' 'Aye, shooting the game,' answered the other; 'but I don't see they are so forward to shoot our enemies. I don't like that affair of Carthage; if I had been there, I believe I should have done other-guess things; d—n me; what's a man's life when his country demands it? a man who won't sacrifice his life for his country, deserves to be hang'd, d—n me.' Which words he spoke with so violent a gesture, so loud a voice, so strong an accent, and so fierce a countenance, that he might have frightened a captain of trained-bands at the head of his company; but Mr Adams was not greatly subject to fear: he told him intrepidly, that he very much approved his virtue, but disliked his swearing, and begged him not to addict himself to so bad a custom, without which he said he might fight as bravely as Achilles did. Indeed he was charmed with this discourse: he told the gentleman, He

would willingly have gone many miles to have met a man of his generous way of thinking; that if he pleased to sit down, he should be greatly delighted to commune with him: for though he was a clergyman, he would himself be ready, if thereto called, to lay down his life for his country.

The gentleman sat down, and Adams by him; and then the latter began, as in the following chapter, a discourse which we have placed by itself, as it is not only the most curious in this, but perhaps in any other book.

## C H A P. VIII.

*A notable dissertation by Mr Abraham Adams; wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.*

‘ I DO assure you, Sir,’ says he, taking the gentleman by the hand, ‘ I am heartily glad to meet with a man of your kidney: for though I am a poor parson, I will be bold to say, I am an honest man, and would not do an ill thing to be made a bishop: nay, though it hath not fallen in my way to offer so noble a sacrifice, I have not been without opportunities of suffering for the sake of my conscience, I thank Heaven for them; for I have had relations, though I say it, who made some figure in the

' world; particularly a nephew, who was a  
 ' shop-keeper, and an alderman of a corpo-  
 ' ration. He was a good lad, and was under  
 ' my care when a boy, and I believe would  
 ' do what I bade him to his dying day. In-  
 ' deed, it looks like extreme vanity in me, to  
 ' affect being a man of such consequence, as  
 ' to have so great an interest in an alderman:  
 ' but others have thought so too, as mani-  
 ' festly appeared by the rector, whose curate  
 ' I formerly was, sending for me on the ap-  
 ' proach of an election, and telling me, If I  
 ' expected to continue in his cure, that I must  
 ' bring my nephew to vote for one Colonel  
 ' Courtly, a gentleman whom I had never  
 ' heard tidings of till that instant. I told the  
 ' rector, I had no power over my nephew's  
 ' vote, (God forgive me for such prevarica-  
 ' tion!) that I supposed he would give it ac-  
 ' cording to his conscience; that I would  
 ' by no means endeavour to influence him  
 ' to give it otherwise. He told me, It was  
 ' in vain to equivocate: that he knew I had  
 ' already spoke to him in favour of Esquire  
 ' Fickle my neighbour; and indeed it was  
 ' true I had: for it was at a season when  
 ' the church was in danger, and when all  
 ' good men expected they knew not what  
 ' would happen to us all. I then answered  
 ' boldly, If he thought I had given my pro-

\* wife, he affronted me, in proposing any  
 \* breach of it. Not to be too prolix; I per-  
 \* severed, and so did my nephew, in the  
 \* Esquire's interest, who was chosen chiefly  
 \* through his means; and so I lost my cu-  
 \* racy. Well, Sir, but do you think the  
 \* 'squire ever mentioned a word of the church?  
 \* *Ne verbum quidem, ut ita dicam;* within  
 \* two years he got a place, and hath ever  
 \* since lived in London; where I have been  
 \* informed (but God forbid I should believe  
 \* that) that he never so much as goeth to  
 \* church. I remained, Sir, a considerable  
 \* time without any cure, and lived a full  
 \* month on one funeral sermon, which I  
 \* preached on the indisposition of a clergy-  
 \* man: but this by the bye. At last, when  
 \* Mr Fickle got his place, Colonel Courtly  
 \* stood again; and who should make interest  
 \* for him but Mr Fickle himself? that very  
 \* identical Mr Fickle, who had formerly told  
 \* me, the Colonel was an enemy both to the  
 \* church and state, had the confidence to  
 \* solicit my nephew for him; and the Co-  
 \* lonel himself offered me to make me cha-  
 \* plain to his regiment, which I refused in  
 \* favour of Sir Oliver Hearty, who told us  
 \* he would sacrifice every thing to his coun-  
 \* try; and I believe he would, except his  
 \* hunting, which he stuck so close to, that



‘ in five years together he went but twice up  
‘ to parliament; and one of those times, I  
‘ have been told, never was within sight of  
‘ the house. However, he was a worthy  
‘ man, and the best friend I ever had: for  
‘ by his interest with a bishop, he got me re-  
‘ placed into my curacy, and gave me eight  
‘ pounds out of his own pocket to buy me a  
‘ gown and cassock, and furnish my house.  
‘ He had our interest while he lived, which  
‘ was not many years. On his death I had  
‘ fresh applications made to me; for all the  
‘ world knew the interest I had with my  
‘ good nephew, who now was a leading man  
‘ in the corporation; and Sir Thomas Booby  
‘ buying the estate which had been Sir Oli-  
‘ ver’s, proposed himself a candidate. He  
‘ was then a young gentleman just come from  
‘ his travels; and it did me good to hear  
‘ him discourse on affairs, which, for my  
‘ part, I knew nothing of. If I had been  
‘ master of a thousand votes, he should have  
‘ had them all. I engaged my nephew in  
‘ his interest; and he was elected, and a very  
‘ fine parliament-man he was. They tell  
‘ me he made speeches of an hour long; and  
‘ I have been told very fine ones: but he  
‘ could never persuade the parliament to be  
‘ of his opinion. — *Non omnia possumus om-  
‘ nes.* He promised me a living, poor man;



and I believe I should have had it, but an accident happened; which was, that my Lady had promised it before, unknown to him. This indeed I never heard till afterwards: for my nephew, who died about a month before the incumbent, always told me I might be assured of it. Since that time, Sir Thomas, poor man, had always so much business, that he never could find leisure to see me. I believe it was partly my Lady's fault too, who did not think my dress good enough for the gentry at her table. However, I must do him the justice to say, he never was ungrateful; and I have always found his kitchen, and his cellar too, open to me; many a time after service on a Sunday, for I preach at four churches, have I recruited my spirits with a glass of his ale. Since my nephew's death, the corporation is in other hands; and I am not a man of that consequence I was formerly. I have now no longer any talents to lay out in the service of my country; and to whom nothing is given, of him can nothing be required. However, on all proper seasons, such as the approach of an election, I throw a suitable dash or two into my sermons; which I have the pleasure to hear is not disagreeable to Sir Thomas and the other honest gentlemen my neigh-

‘ bours, who have all promised me these five  
‘ years, to procure an ordination for a son  
‘ of mine, who is now near thirty, hath an  
‘ infinite stock of learning, and is, I thank  
‘ Heaven, of an unexceptionable life; tho’,  
‘ as he was never at an university, the bishop  
‘ refuses to ordain him. Too much care  
‘ cannot indeed be taken in admitting any  
‘ to the sacred office; though I hope he will  
‘ never act so as to be a disgrace to any or-  
‘ der; but will serve his God and his coun-  
‘ try to the utmost of his power, as I have  
‘ endeavoured to do before him; nay, and  
‘ will lay down his life whenever called to  
‘ that purpose. I am sure I have educated  
‘ him in those principles; so that I have ac-  
‘ quitted my duty, and shall have nothing  
‘ to answer for on that account; but I do  
‘ not distrust him: for he is a good boy;  
‘ and, if Providence should throw it in his  
‘ way to be of as much consequence in a pu-  
‘ blic light, as his father once was, I can an-  
‘ swer for him, he will use his talents as ho-  
‘ nestly as I have done.’

## C H A P. IX.

*In which the gentleman descants on bravery and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident puts an end to the discourse.*

THE gentleman highly commended Mr Adams for his good resolutions, and told him, He hoped his son would tread in his steps; adding, that if he would not die for his country, he would not be worthy to live in it. ‘I’d make no more of shooting a man that would not die for his country, than——’

‘Sir,’ said he, ‘I have disinherited a nephew who is in the army; because he would not exchange his commission, and go to the West Indies. I believe the rascal is a coward, though he pretends to be in love forsooth. I would have all such fellows hanged, Sir; I would have them hanged.’

Adams answered, ‘That would be too severe; that men did not make themselves; and if fear had too much ascendance in the mind, the man was rather to be pitied than abhorred; that reason and time might teach him to subdue it.’ He said, ‘a man might be a coward at one time, and brave at another. Homer,’ says he, ‘who so well understood and copied nature, hath

‘ taught us this lesson; for Paris fights, and  
 ‘ Hector runs away: nay, we have a mighty  
 ‘ instance of this in the history of later ages,  
 ‘ no longer ago than the 705th year of  
 ‘ Rome, when the great Pompey, who had  
 ‘ won so many battles, and been honoured  
 ‘ with so many triumphs, and of whose va-  
 ‘ lour several authors, especially Cicero and  
 ‘ Paterculus, have formed such eulogiums;  
 ‘ this very Pompey left the battle of Phar-  
 ‘ salia before he had lost it, and retreated to  
 ‘ his tent, where he sat like the most pusilla-  
 ‘ nimous rascal in a fit of despair, and yield-  
 ‘ ed a victory, which was to determine the  
 ‘ empire of the world, to Cæsar. I am not  
 ‘ much travelled in the history of modern  
 ‘ times, that is to say, these last thousand  
 ‘ years: but those who are can, I make no  
 ‘ question, furnish you with parallel instances.’  
 He concluded therefore, that had he taken  
 any such hasty resolutions against his nephew,  
 he hoped he would consider better, and re-  
 tract them. The gentleman answered with  
 great warmth, and talked much of courage  
 and his country, till perceiving it grew late,  
 he asked Adams, ‘ what place he intended  
 ‘ for that night?’ He told him, ‘ he waited  
 ‘ there for the stage-coach.’ ‘ The stage-  
 ‘ coach! Sir,’ said the gentleman, ‘ they are  
 ‘ all past by long ago. You may see the

'last yourself almost three miles before us.'  
 'I protest and so there are,' cries Adams,  
 'then I must make haste and follow them.'  
 The gentleman told him, he would hardly  
 be able to overtake them; and that if he did  
 not know his way, he would be in danger of  
 losing himself on the downs; for it would be  
 presently dark; and he might ramble about  
 all night, and, perhaps, find himself farther  
 from his journey's end in the morning than  
 he was now. He advised him therefore to  
 accompany him to his house, which was  
 very little out of his way, assuring him, that  
 he would find some country-fellow in his  
 parish, who would conduct him for sixpence  
 to the city where he was going. Adams ac-  
 cepted this proposal, and on they travelled,  
 the gentleman renewing the discourse on  
 courage, and the infamy of not being ready  
 at all times to sacrifice our lives to our coun-  
 try. Night overtook them much about the  
 same time as they arrived near some bushes:  
 whence, on a sudden, they heard the most  
 violent shrieks imaginable in a female voice.  
 Adams offered to snatch the gun out of his  
 companion's hand. 'What are you doing?'  
 said he, 'Doing!' says Adams, 'I am ha-  
 stening to the assistance of the poor crea-  
 ture whom some villains are murdering.'  
 'You are not mad enough, I hope,' says

the gentleman, trembling: ' Do you consider this gun is only charged with shot, and that the robbers are most probably furnished with pistols loaded with bullets? This is no business of ours; let us make as much haste as possible out of the way, or we may fall into their hands ourselves.' The shrieks now increasing, Adams made no answer, but snapt his fingers, and brandishing his crabstick, made directly to the place whence the voice issued; and the man of courage made as much expedition towards his own home, whither he escaped in a very short time without once looking behind him: where we will leave him, to contemplate his own bravery, and to censure the want of it in others; and return to the good Adams, who, on coming up to the place whence the noise proceeded, found a woman struggling with a man, who had thrown her on the ground, and had almost overpowered her. The great abilities of Mr Adams were not necessary to have formed a right judgment of this affair on the first sight. He did not therefore want the entreaties of the poor wretch to assist her; but lifting up his crabstick, he immediately levelled a blow at that part of the ravisher's head, where, according to the opinion of the ancients, the brains of some persons are deposited, and which he



had undoubtedly let forth, had not Nature (who, as wise men have observed, equips all creatures with what is most expedient for them) taken a provident care (as she always doth with those she intends for encounters) to make this part of the head three times as thick as those of ordinary men, who are designed to exercise talents which are vulgarly called *rational*, and for whom, as brains are necessary, she is obliged to leave some room for them in the cavity of the skull: whereas, those ingredients being entirely useless to persons of the heroic calling, she hath an opportunity of thickening the bone, so as to make it less subject to any impression, or liable to be cracked or broken; and indeed, in some who are predestined to the command of armies and empires, she is supposed sometimes to make that part perfectly solid.

As a game-cock, when engaged in amorous toying with a hen, if perchance he espies another cock at hand, immediately quits his female, and opposes himself to his rival; so did the ravisher, on the information of the crabstick, immediately leap from the woman, and hasten to assail the man. He had no weapons but what Nature had furnished him with. However, he clenched his fist, and presently darted it at that part of Adams's breast where the heart is lodged. Adams

staggered at the violence of the blow, when, throwing away his staff, he likewise clenched that fist which we have before commemorated, and would have discharged it full in the breast of his antagonist, had he not dextrously caught it with his left hand, at the same time darting his head, (which some modern heroes of the lower class use, like the battering-ram of the Ancients, for a weapon of offence; another reason to admire the cunningness of Nature, in composing it of those impenetrable materials), dashing his head, I say, into the stomach of Adams, he tumbled him on his back, and not having any regard to the laws of heroism, which would have restrained him from any farther attack on his enemy till he was again on his legs, he threw himself upon him, and laying hold on the ground with his left hand, he with his right belaboured the body of Adams till he was weary, and indeed till he concluded (to use the language of fighting) that he had done his business; or in the language of poetry, that he had sent him to the shades below; in plain English, that he was dead.

But Adams, who was no chicken, and could bear a drubbing as well as any boxing-champion in the universe, lay still only to watch his opportunity; and now perceiving his antagonist to pant with his labours, he

## JOSEPH ANDREWS. 233.

exerted his utmost force at once, and with such success, that he overturned him, and became his superior; when fixing one of his knees in his breast, he cried out in an exulting voice, 'It is my turn now;' and after a few minutes constant application, he gave him so dextrous a blow just under his chin, that the fellow no longer retained any motion, and Adams began to fear he had struck him once too often; for he often asserted, He should be concerned to have the blood of even the wicked upon him.

Adams got up, and called aloud to the young woman,——'Be of good cheer, dam-fel,' said he, 'you are no longer in danger of your ravisher, who, I am terribly afraid, lyes dead at my feet; but God forgive me what I have done in defence of innocence.' The poor wretch, who had been some time in recovering strength enough to rise, and had afterwards, during the engagement, stood trembling, being disabled by fear, even from running away, hearing her champion was victorious, came up to him, but not without apprehensions, even of her deliverer; which, however, she was soon relieved from, by his courteous behaviour and gentle words. They were both standing by the body, which lay motionless on the ground, and which Adams wished to see stir much more than the



woman did, when he earnestly begged her to tell him, by what misfortune she came, at such a time of night, into so lonely a place? She acquainted him, She was travelling towards London, and had accidentally met with the person from whom he had delivered her, who told her he was likewise on his journey to the same place, and would keep her company: an offer which, suspecting no harm, she had accepted: that he told her, they were at a small distance from an inn where she might take up her lodging that evening, and he would shew her a nearer way to it than by following the road. That if she had suspected him, (which she did not, he spoke so kindly to her); being alone on these downs in the dark, she had no human means to avoid him; that therefore she put her whole trust in Providence, and walked on, expecting every moment to arrive at the inn; when, on a sudden, being come to those bushes, he desired her to stop, and after some rude kisses, which she resisted, and some entreaties, which she rejected, he laid violent hands on her, and was attempting to execute his wicked will, when, she thanked God, he timely came up, and prevented him. Adams encouraged her for saying she had put her whole trust in Providence, and told her, He doubted not but Providence had sent him to

her deliverance, as a reward for that trust. He wished, indeed, he had not deprived the wicked wretch of life, but God's will be done; he said, He hoped the goodness of his intention would excuse him in the next world, and he trusted in her evidence to acquit him in this. He was then silent, and began to consider with himself, whether it would be proper to make his escape, or to deliver himself into the hands of justice; which meditation ended as the reader will see in the next chapter.

C H A P. X.

*Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.*

THE silence of Adams, added to the darkness of the night, and loneliness of the place, struck dreadful apprehensions into the poor woman's mind: she began to fear as great an enemy in her deliverer, as he had delivered her from; and as she had not light enough to discover the age of Adams, and the benevolence visible in his countenance, she suspected he had used her as some very honest men have used their country; and

had rescued her out of the hands of one riffer, in order to rifle her himself. Such were the suspicions she drew from his silence: but indeed they were ill-grounded. He stood over his vanquished enemy, wisely weighing in his mind, the objections which might be made to either of the two methods of proceeding mentioned in the last chapter, his judgment sometimes inclining to the one, and sometimes to the other; for both seemed to him so equally adviseable, and so equally dangerous, that probably he would have ended his days, at least two or three of them, on that very spot, before he had taken any resolution: at length he lifted up his eyes, and spied a light at a distance, to which he instantly addressed himself with *Heus tu, Traveller, heus tu!* He presently heard several voices, and perceived the light approaching toward him. The persons who attended the light began some to laugh, others to sing, and others to hallow, at which the woman testified some fear, (for she had concealed her suspicions of the Parson himself,) but Adams said, ‘ Be of good cheer, ‘ Damfel, and repose thy trust in the same ‘ Providence which hath hitherto protected ‘ thee, and never will forsake the innocent.’ These people who now approached were no other, Reader, than a set of young fellows, who came to these bushes in pursuit of a di-



version which they call Bird-batting. This, if thou art ignorant of it (as perhaps, if thou hast never travelled beyond Kensington, Islington, Hackney, or the Borough, thou mayst be) I will inform thee, is performed by holding a large clap net before a lanthorn, and at the same time beating the bushes: for the birds, when they are disturbed from their places of rest, or roost, immediately make to the light, and so are enticed within the net. Adams immediately told them what happened, and desired them to hold the lanthorn to the face of the man on the ground, for he feared he had smote him fatally. But indeed his fears were frivolous; for the fellow, tho' he had been stunned by the last blow he received, had long since recovered his senses, and finding himself quit of Adams, had listened attentively to the discourse between him and the young woman; for whose departure he had patiently waited, that he might likewise withdraw himself, having no longer hopes of succeeding in his desires, which were moreover almost as well cooled by Mr Adams, as they could have been by the young woman herself had he obtained his utmost wish. This fellow, who had a readiness at improving any accident, thought he might now play a better part than that of a dead man; and accordingly, the moment the can-

die was held to his face, he leaped up, and laying hold on Adams, cried out, 'No, Villain, I am not dead, though you and your wicked whore might well think me so, after the barbarous cruelties you have exercised on me. Gentlemen,' said he, 'you are luckily come to the assistance of a poor traveller, who would otherwise have been robbed and murdered by this vile man and woman, who led me hither out of my way from the high-road, and both falling on me have used me as you see.' Adams was going to answer, when one of the young fellows cried, 'D—n them, let's carry them both before the justice.' The poor woman began to tremble, and Adams lifted up his voice, but in vain. Three or four of them laid hands on him, and one holding the lantern to his face, they all agreed, He had the most villainous countenance they ever beheld; and an attorney's clerk who was of the company declared, He was sure he had remembered him at the bar. As to the woman, her hair was dishevelled in the struggle; and her nose had bled, so that they could not perceive whether she was handsome or ugly, but they said her fright plainly discovered her guilt. And searching her pockets, as they did those of Adams, for money, which the fellow said he had lost, they found in her pocket a purse

with some gold in it, which abundantly convinced them, especially as the fellow offered to swear to it. Mr Adams was found to have no more than one halfpenny about him. This, the clerk said, was a great presumption that he was an old offender, by cunningly giving all the booty to the woman. To which all the rest readily assented.

This accident promising them better sport than what they had proposed, they quitted their intention of catching birds, and unanimously resolved to proceed to the justice with the offenders. Being informed what a desperate fellow Adams was, they tied his hands behind him; and having hid their nets among the bushes, and the lanthorn being carried before them, they placed the two prisoners in their front, and then began their march: Adams not only submitting patiently to his own fate, but comforting and encouraging his companion under her sufferings.

Whilst they were on their way, the clerk informed the rest, that this adventure would prove a very beneficial one; for that they would be all entitled to their proportion of 80 l. for apprehending the robbers. This occasioned a contention concerning the parts which they had severally borne in taking them; one insisting he ought to have the greatest share; for he had first laid hand on

Adams; another claiming a superior part, for having first held the lanthorn to the man's face on the ground, by which he said, the whole was discovered. The clerk claimed four fifths of the reward, for having proposed to search the prisoners; and likewise the carrying them before a justice: he said, indeed, in strict justice, he ought to have the whole. These claims, however, they at last consented to refer to a future decision, but seemed all to agree that the clerk was entitled to a moiety. They then debated what money should be allotted to the young fellow, who had been employed only in holding the nets. He very modestly said that he did not apprehend any large proportion would fall to his share; but hoped they would allow him something: he desired them to consider that they had assigned their nets to his care, which prevented him from being as forward as any in laying hold of the robbers, (for so these innocent people were called;) that if he had not occupied the nets, some other must: concluding, however, that he should be contented with the smallest share imaginable, and should think that rather their bounty than his merit. But they were all unanimous in excluding him from any part whatever, the clerk particularly swearing, if they gave him a shilling, they might do what they pleased with the

rest; for he would not concern himself with the affair. This contention was so hot, and so totally engaged the attention of all the parties, that a dextrous nimble thief, had he been in Mr Adams's situation, would have taken care to have given the justice no trouble that evening. Indeed, it required not the art of a shepherd to escape, especially as the darkness of the night would have so much befriended him; but Adams trusted rather to his innocence than his heels, and without thinking of flight, which was easy, or resistance (which was impossible, as there were six lusty young fellows, besides the villain himself, present) he walked with perfect resignation the way they thought proper to conduct him.

Adams frequently vented himself in ejaculations during their journey; at last poor Joseph Andrews occurring to his mind, he could not refrain sighing forth his name, which being heard by his companion in affliction, she cried, with some vehemence, 'Sure I should know that voice; you cannot certainly, Sir, be Mr Abraham Adams!' 'Indeed, damsel,' says he, 'that is my name; there is something also in your voice, which persuades me I have heard it before.' 'La, Sir,' says she, 'don't you remember poor Fanny?' 'How, Fanny!'



answered Adams, 'indeed I very well remember you; what can have brought you hither?' 'I have told you, Sir,' replied she, 'I was travelling towards London; but I thought you mentioned Joseph Andrews; pray what is become of him?' 'I left him, Child, this afternoon,' said Adams, 'in the stage-coach, in his way towards our parish, whither he is going to see you.' 'To see me! la, Sir,' answered Fanny, 'sure you jeer me; what should he be going to see me for?' 'Can you ask that?' replied Adams, 'I hope, Fanny, you are not inconstant; I assure you he deserves much better of you.' 'La! Mr Adams,' said she, 'what is Mr Joseph to me? I am sure I never had any thing to say to him, but as one fellow-servant might to another.' 'I am sorry to hear this,' said Adams; 'a virtuous passion for a young man, is what no woman need be ashamed of. You either do not tell me truth, or you are false to a very worthy man.' Adams then told her what had happened at the inn, to which she listened very attentively; and a sigh often escaped from her, notwithstanding her utmost endeavours to the contrary; nor could she prevent herself from asking a thousand questions, which would have assured any one but Adams, who never saw farther into people

---

than they desired to let him, of the truth of a passion she endeavoured to conceal. Indeed, the fact was, that this poor girl having heard of Joseph's misfortune by some of the servants belonging to the coach, which we have formerly mentioned to have stopt at the inn while the poor youth was confined to his bed, that instant abandoned the cow she was milking, and taking with her a little bundle of clothes under her arm, and all the money she was worth in her own purse, without consulting any one, immediately set forward, in pursuit of one, whom, notwithstanding her shyness to the Parson, she loved with inexpressible violence, though with the purest and most delicate passion. This shyness, therefore, as we trust it will recommend her character to all our female readers, and not greatly surprize such of our males as are well acquainted with the younger part of the other sex, we shall not give ourselves any trouble to vindicate.

C H A P. XI.

*What happened to them while before the Justice. A chapter very full of learning.*

THEIR fellow-travellers were so engaged in the hot dispute concerning the division of the reward for apprehending

these innocent people, that they attended very little to their discourse. They were now arrived at the Justice's house, and had sent one of his servants in to acquaint his worship, that they had taken two robbers, and brought them before him. The Justice, who was just returned from a fox-chace, and had not yet finished his dinner, ordered them to carry the prisoners into the stable, whether they were attended by all the servants in the house, and all the people in the neighbourhood, who flocked together to see them with as much curiosity as if there was something uncommon to be seen, or that a rogue did not look like other people.

The Justice now being in the height of his mirth and his cups, bethought himself of the prisoners, and telling his company he believed they should have good sport in their examination, he ordered them into his presence. They had no sooner entered the room, than he began to revile them, saying, that robberies on the highway were now grown so frequent, that people could not sleep safely in their beds, and assured them they both should be made examples of at the ensuing assizes. After he had gone on some time in this manner, he was reminded by his clerk, that it would be proper to take the depositions of the witnesses against them:

which he bid him do, and he would light his pipe in the mean time. Whilst the clerk was employed in writing down the deposition of the fellow who pretended he had been robbed, the Justice employed himself in cracking jests on poor Fanny, in which he was seconded by all the company at table. One asked, whether she was to be indicted for a highwayman? Another whispered in her ear, if she had not provided herself a great belly, he was at her service. A third said, he warranted she was a relation of Turpin. To which one of the company, a great wit, shaking his head, and then his sides, answered, he believed she was nearer related to Turpis; at which there was an universal laugh. They were proceeding thus with the poor girl, when somebody smoaking the cassock peeping forth from under the great coat of Adams, cried out, ‘What have we here? a parson?’ ‘How, firrah,’ says the justice, ‘do you go robbing in the dress of a clergyman? let me tell you your habit will not entitle you to the benefit of the clergy.’ ‘Yes,’ said the witty fellow, ‘he will have one benefit of clergy, he will be exalted above the heads of the people;’ at which there was a second laugh. And now the witty spark seeing his jokes take, began to rise in spirits; and turning to Adams, chal-

lenged him to cap verses, and provoking him by giving the first blow, he repeated,

*Molie meum levibus cord' est vilebile telis.*

Upon which Adams, with a look full of ineffable contempt, told him he deserved scourging for his pronunciation. The witty fellow answered, ‘What do you deserve, Doctor, for not being able to answer the first time? Why, I’ll give you one, you blockhead—with an S.

*‘ Si licet, ut subvum spectatur in ignibus haurum.’*

‘What, can’st not with an M neither? thou art a pretty fellow for a parson——. Why didst not steal some of the parson’s Latin as well as his gown?’ Another at the table then answered, ‘If he had, you would have been too hard for him; I remember you at the college a very devil at this sport; I have seen you catch a fresh man: for nobody that knew you, would engage with you.’ ‘I have forgot these things now,’ cried the wit. ‘I believe I could have done pretty well formerly.— Let’s see, what did I end with—an M again—ay—

*‘ Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.’*

‘I could have done it once.’——‘Ah! evil



‘ betide you, and so you can now,’ said the other, ‘ nobody in this country will undertake you.’ Adams could hold no longer; ‘ Friend,’ said he, ‘ I have a boy not above eight years old, who would instruct thee, that the last verse runs thus :

‘ *Ut sunt divorum, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.*

‘ I’ll hold thee a guinea of that,’ said the wit, throwing the money on the table.— ‘ And I’ll go your halves,’ cries the other. ‘ Done,’ answered Adams; but upon applying to his pocket, he was forced to retract, and own he had no money about him; which set them all a-laughing, and confirmed the triumph of his adversary, which was not moderate, any more than the approbation he met with from the whole company, who told Adams, he must go a little longer to school, before he attempted to attack that gentleman in Latin.

The clerk having finished the depositions, as well of the fellow himself, as of those who apprehended the prisoners, delivered them to the Justice; who having sworn the several witnesses, without reading a syllable, ordered his clerk to make the mittimus.

Adams-then said, ‘ he hoped he should not be condemned unheard.’ ‘ No, no,’ cries

the Justice, ‘ you will be asked what you  
 ‘ have to say for yourself, when you come  
 ‘ on your trial: we are not trying you now;  
 ‘ I shall only commit you to goal; if you can  
 ‘ prove your innocence at Size, you will be  
 ‘ found Ignoramus, and so no harm done.’  
 ‘ Is it no punishment, Sir, for an innocent  
 ‘ man to lie several months in goal?’ cries  
 Adams: ‘ I beg you would at least hear me  
 ‘ before you sign the mittimus.’ ‘ What sig-  
 ‘ nifies all you can say?’ says the Justice, ‘ is  
 ‘ it not here in black and white against you?  
 ‘ I must tell you, you are a very impertinent  
 ‘ fellow, to take up so much of my time.---  
 ‘ So make haste with his mittimus.’

The clerk now acquainted the justice, that among other suspicious things, as a penknife, &c. found in Adams’s pocket, they had discovered a book written, as he apprehended, in cyphers: for no one could read a word in it. ‘ Aye,’ says the justice, ‘ the fellow may be more than a common robber, he may be in a plot against the government—Produce the book.’ Upon which the poor manuscript of Æschylus, which Adams had transcribed with his own hand, was brought forth; and the Justice looking at it shook his head, and turning to the prisoner asked the meaning of those cyphers. ‘ Cyphers!’ answered Adams, ‘ it is a manuscript of Æſ-

‘ chylus.’ Who? who?’ said the Justice. Adams repeated, ‘ Æschylus.’ ‘ That is an outlandish name,’ cried the clerk. ‘ A fictitious name rather, I believe,’ said the Justice. One of the company declared it looked very much like Greek. ‘ Greek?’ said the Justice, ‘ why ’tis all writing.’ ‘ No,’ says the other, ‘ I don’t positively say it is so; for it is a very long time since I have seen any Greek: there’s one,’ says he, turning to the parson of the parish, who was present, ‘ will tell us immediately.’ The parson taking up the book, and putting on his spectacles and gravity together, muttered some words to himself, and then pronounced aloud—‘ Aye, indeed, it is a Greek manuscript, a very fine piece of antiquity. I make no doubt but it was stolen from the same clergyman from whom the rogue took the cassock.’ ‘ What did the rascal mean by his Æschylus?’ says the Justice. ‘ Pooh!’ answered the Doctor, with a contemptuous grin, ‘ do you think that fellow knows any thing of this book? Æschylus! ho! ho! I see now what it is—a manuscript of one of the fathers. I know a nobleman who would give a great deal of money for such a piece of antiquity.—Ay, ay, question and answer. The beginning is the catechism in Greek.—Ay, ay,——

## 250 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ *Pollaki toi*---What’s your name?’---‘ Ay, what’s your name?’ says the Justice to Adams, who answered, ‘ It is Æschylus, and I will maintain it.’---‘ O it is !’ says the Justice, ‘ make Mr Æschylus his mittimus. I will teach you to banter me with a false name.’

One of the company having looked steadfastly at Adams, asked him, if he did not know Lady Booby? Upon which Adams, presently calling him to mind, answered in a rapture, ‘ O Squire, are you there? I believe you will inform his Worship I am innocent.’ ‘ I can indeed say,’ replied the Squire, ‘ that I am very much surpris’d to see you in this situation;’ and then addressing himself to the Justice, he said, ‘ Sir, I assure you Mr Adams is a clergyman as he appears, and a gentleman of a very good character. I wish you would enquire a little farther into this affair; for I am convinc’d of his innocence.’ ‘ Nay,’ says the Justice, ‘ if he is a gentleman, and you are sure he is innocent, I don’t desire to commit him, not I; I will commit the woman by herself, and take your bail for the gentleman; look into the book, clerk, and see how it is to take bail: come---and make the mittimus for the woman as fast as you can.’ ‘ Sir,’ cries Adams, ‘ I assure you she is as innocent

‘ as myself.’ ‘ Perhaps,’ said the Squire, ‘ there may be some mistake; pray let us ‘ hear Mr Adams’s relation.’ ‘ With all my ‘ heart,’ answered the Justice, ‘ and give the ‘ gentleman a glass to wet his whittle before ‘ he begins. I know how to behave myself ‘ to a gentleman as well as another. Nobody ‘ can say I have committed a gentleman, ‘ since I have been in the commission.’ Adams then began the narrative, in which, though he was very prolix, he was uninterrupted, unless by several hums and ha’s of the Justice, and his desire to repeat those parts which seemed to him the most material. When he had finished, the Justice, who, on what the Squire had said, believed every syllable of his story on his bare affirmation, notwithstanding the depositions on oath to the contrary, began to let loose several rogues and rascals against the witness, whom he ordered to stand forth, but in vain: the said witness, long since, finding what turn matters were like to take, had privily withdrawn, without attending the issue. The Justice now flew into a violent passion, and was hardly prevailed with not to commit the innocent fellows, who had been imposed on as well as himself. He swore, They had best find out the fellow who was guilty of perjury, and bring him before him within two



days, or he would bind them all over to their good behaviour. They all promised to use their best endeavours to that purpose, and were dismissed. Then the Justice insisted, that Mr Adams, should sit down and take a glass with him; and the parson of the parish delivered him back the manuscript without saying a word; nor would Adams, who plainly discerned his ignorance, expose it. As for Fanny, she was, at her own request, recommended to the care of a maid-servant of the house, who helped her to new-dress, and clean herself.

The company in the parlour had not been long seated, before they were alarmed with a horrible uproar from without, where the persons who had apprehended Adams and Fanny, had been regaling, according to the custom of the house, with the Justice's strong beer. These were all fallen together by the ears, and were cuffing each other without any mercy. The Justice himself sallied out, and, with the dignity of his presence, soon put an end to the fray. On his return into the parlour, he reported, That the occasion of the quarrel was no other than a dispute, to whom, if Adams had been convicted, the greater share of the reward for apprehending him had belonged. All the company laughed at this, except Adams, who, taking

his pipe from his mouth, fetched a deep groan, and said, he was concerned to see so litigious a temper in men: that he remembered a story something like it in one of the parishes where his cure lay: 'There was,' continued he, 'a competition between three young fellows for the place of the clerk; which I disposed of to the best of my abilities, according to merit: that is, I gave it to him who had the happiest knack at setting a psalm. The clerk was no sooner established in his place, than a contention began between the two disappointed candidates concerning their excellence, each contending, on whom, had they two been the only competitors, my election would have fallen. This dispute frequently disturbed the congregation, and introduced a discord into the psalmody, till I was forced to silence them both. But alas, the litigious spirit could not be stifled; and being no longer able to vent itself in singing, it now broke forth in fighting. It produced many battles, (for they were very near a match;) and, I believe, would have ended fatally, had not the death of the clerk given me an opportunity to promote one of them to his place; which presently put an end to the dispute, and entirely reconciled the contending parties.' Adams

then proceeded to make some philosophical observations on the folly of growing warm in disputes, in which neither party is interested. He then applied himself vigorously to smoking; and a long silence ensued, which was at length broke by the Justice: who began to sing forth his own praises, and to value himself exceedingly on his nice discernment in the cause which had lately been before him. He was quickly interrupted by Mr Adams, between whom and his Worship a dispute now arose, whether he ought not, in strictness of law, to have committed him, the said Adams; in which the latter maintained he ought to have been committed; and the Justice as vehemently held he ought not. This had most probably produced a quarrel, (for both were very violent and positive in their opinions), had not Fanny accidentally heard, that a young fellow was going from the Justice's house to the very inn where the stage-coach, in which Joseph was, put up. Upon this news, she immediately sent for the Parson out of the parlour. Adams, when he found her resolute to go, (though she would not own the reason, but pretended she could not bear to see the faces of those who had suspected her of such a crime) was as fully determined to go with her; he accordingly took leave of the

Justice and company, and so ended a dispute in which the law seemed shamefully to intend to set a magistrate and a divine together by the ears.

C H A P. XII.

*A very delightful adventure, as well to the persons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.*

ADAMS, Fanny, and the guide, set out together, about one in the morning, the moon being just then risen. They had not gone above a mile before a most violent storm of rain obliged them to take shelter in an inn, or rather alehouse; where Adams immediately procured himself a good fire, a toast and ale, and a pipe, and began to smoke with great content, utterly forgetting every thing that had happened.

Fanny likewise sat down by the fire; but was much more impatient at the storm. She presently engaged the eyes of the host, his wife, the maid of the house, and the young fellow who was their guide; they all conceived they had never seen any thing half so handsome: and indeed, Reader, if thou art of an amorous hue, I advise you to skip over the next paragraph: which, to render our history perfect, we are obliged to set down, humbly hoping, that we may escape the fate

## 256 THE ADVENTURES OF

of Pygmalion: for if it should happen to us or to thee to be struck with this picture, we should be perhaps in as helpless a condition as Narcissus; and might say to ourselves, *quod petis est nusquam*. Or, if the finest features in it should set Lady ——'s image before our eyes, we should be still in as bad a situation, and might say to our desires, *Cælam ipsum petimus stultitia*.

Fanny was now in the nineteenth year of her age; she was tall and delicately shaped; but not one of those slender young women, who seem rather intended to hang up in the hall of an anatomist, than for any other purpose. On the contrary, she was so plump, that she seemed bursting through her tight stays, especially in the part which confined her swelling breasts. Nor did her hips want the assistance of a hoop to extend them. The exact shape of her arms denoted the form of those limbs which she concealed; and though they were a little reddened by her labour, yet, if her sleeve slipped above her elbow, or her handkerchief discovered any part of her neck, a whiteness appeared which the finest Italian paint would be unable to reach. Her hair was of a chestnut brown, and Nature had been extremely lavish to her of it, which she had cut, and on Sundays used to curl down her neck in the modern fashion. Her



forehead was high, her eyebrows arched, and rather full than otherwise. Her eyes black and sparkling; her nose just inclining to the Roman; her lips red and moist, and her underlip, according to the opinion of the ladies, too pouting. Her teeth were white, but not exactly even. The small-pox had left one only mark on her chin, which was so large, it might have been mistaken for a dimple, had not her left cheek produced one so near a neighbour to it, that the former served only for a foil to the latter. Her complexion was fair, a little injured by the sun, but overspread with such a bloom, that the finest ladies would have exchanged all their white for it: add to these a countenance, in which, though she was extremely bashful, a sensibility appeared almost incredible; and a sweetness whenever she smiled, beyond either imitation or description. To conclude all, she had a natural gentility, superior to the acquisition of art, and which surprised all who beheld her.

This lovely creature was sitting by the fire with Adams, when her attention was suddenly engaged by a voice from an inner room, which sung the following song.

## The S O N G.

**S**AY, Chloe, where must the swain stray,  
 Who is by thy beauties undone,  
 To wash their remembrance away,  
 To what distant Lethe must run?  
 The wretch who is sentenc'd to die,  
 May escape, and leave justice behind;  
 From his country perhaps he may fly:  
 But O can he fly from his mind!  
 O rapture! unthought of before,  
 To be thus of Chloe possess'd;  
 Nor she, nor no tyrant's hard power,  
 Her image can tear from my breast.  
 But felt not Narcissus more joy?  
 With his eyes he beheld his lov'd charms;  
 Yet what he beheld, the fond boy  
 More eagerly wish'd in his arms.  
 How can it thy dear image be,  
 Which fills thus my bosom with woe?  
 Can ought bear resemblance to thee,  
 Which grief and not joy can bestow?  
 This counterfeit snatch from my heart,  
 Ye Pow'rs, tho' with torment I rave,  
 Tho' mortal will prove the fell smart,  
 I then shall find rest in my grave.  
 Ah! see the dear nymph o'er the plain  
 Come smiling and tripping along:  
 A thousand Loves dance in her train;  
 The Graces around her all throng.

---

To meet her soft Zephyrus flies,  
 And wafts all the sweets from the flow'rs;  
 Ah, Rogue! whilst he kisses her eyes,  
 More sweets from her breath he devours.

My soul, whilst I gaze, is on fire:  
 But her looks were so tender and kind,  
 My hope almost reach'd my desire,  
 And left lame Despair far behind.

Transported with madness I flew,  
 And eagerly seiz'd on my bliss;  
 Her bosom but half she withdrew,  
 But half she refus'd my fond kiss.

Advances like these made me bold;  
 I whisper'd her, Love,—we're alone.  
 The rest let immortals unfold,  
 No language can tell but their own.

Ah! Chloe, expiring, I cry'd,  
 How long I thy cruelty bore?  
 Ah! Strephon, she blushing reply'd,  
 You ne'er was so pressing before.

Adams had been ruminating all this time on a passage in Æschylus, without attending in the least to the voice, though one of the most melodious that ever was heard; when casting his eyes on Fanny, he cried out, 'Bless us, you look extremely pale.' 'Pale! Mr Adams,' says she, 'O Jesus!' and fell backward in her chair. Adams jumped up, flung his Æschylus into the fire, and fell a

roaring to the people of the house for help. He soon summoned every one into the room, and the songster among the rest: but, O reader, when this nightingale, who was no other than Joseph Andrews himself, saw his beloved Fanny in the situation we have described her, canst thou conceive the agitation of his mind? If thou canst not, wave that meditation to behold his happiness, when clasping her in his arms, he found life and blood returning into her cheeks; when he saw her open her beloved eyes, and heard her with the softest accent whisper, 'Are you Joseph Andrews?' 'Art thou my Fanny?' he answered eagerly, and pulling her to his heart, he imprinted numberless kisses on her lips, without considering who were present.

If prudes are offended at the lasciviousness of this picture, they may take their eyes off from it, and survey parson Adams dancing about the room in a rapture of joy. Some philosophers may perhaps doubt, whether he was not the happiest of the three; for the goodness of his heart enjoyed the blessings which were exulting in the breasts of both the other two, together with his own. But we shall leave such disquisitions, as too deep for us, to those who are building some favourite hypothesis, which they will refuse to

metaphysical rubbish to erect and support: for our part, we give it clearly on the side of Joseph, whose happiness was not only greater than the Parson's, but of longer duration: for as soon as the first tumults of Adams's rapture were over, he cast his eyes towards the fire, where *Æschylus* lay expiring; and immediately rescued the poor remains, to wit, the sheep-skin covering of his dear friend, which was the work of his own hands, and had been his inseparable companion for upwards of thirty years.

Fanny had no sooner perfectly recovered herself, than she began to restrain the impetuosity of her transports; and reflecting on what she had done and suffered in the presence of so many, she was immediately covered with confusion; and pushing Joseph gently from her, she begged him to be quiet: nor would admit of either kiss or embrace any longer. Then seeing Mrs Slipslop, she curt'sied, and offered to advance to her; but that high woman would not return her curt'sies; but casting her eyes another way, immediately withdrew into another room, muttering as she went, she wondered who the creature was.



## C H A P. XIII.

*A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Sliplop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.*

**I**T will doubtless seem extremely odd to many readers, that Mrs Sliplop, who had lived several years in the same house with Fanny, should in a short separation utterly forget her. And indeed the truth is, that she remembered her very well. As we would not willingly therefore, that any thing should appear unnatural in this our history, we will endeavour to explain the reasons of her conduct; nor do we doubt being able to satisfy the most curious reader, that Mrs Sliplop did not in the least deviate from the common road in this behaviour; and indeed, had she done otherwise, she must have descended below herself, and would have very justly been liable to censure.

Be it known then, that the human species are divided into two sorts of people, to wit, High people and Low people. As by high people, I would not be understood to mean persons literally born higher in their dimensions than the rest of the species, nor metaphorically those of exalted character or abi-

lities; so by low people I cannot be construed to intend the reverse. High people signify no other than people of fashion, and low people those of no fashion. Now this word *fashion* hath by long use lost its original meaning, from which at present it gives us a very different idea: for I am deceived, if by persons of fashion we do not generally include a conception of birth and accomplishments superior to the herd of mankind; whereas, in reality, nothing more was originally meant by a person of fashion, than a person who dressed himself in the fashion of the times; and the word really and truly signifies no more at this day. Now the world being thus divided into people of fashion, and people of no fashion, a fierce contention arose between them; nor would those of one party, to avoid suspicion, be seen publicly to speak to those of the other, though they often held a very good correspondence in private. In this contention, it is difficult to say which party succeeded: for whilst the people of fashion seized several places to their own use, such as courts, assemblies, operas, balls, &c.; the people of no fashion, besides one royal place, called his majesty's bear-garden, have been in constant possession of all hops, fairs, revels, &c. Two places have been agreed to be divided between them, namely the church

and the play-house; where they segregate themselves from each other in a remarkable manner: for as the people of fashion exalt themselves at church over the heads of the people of no fashion, so in the play-house they abase themselves in the same degree under their feet. This distinction I have never met with any one able to account for: it is sufficient, that so far from looking on each other as brethren in the Christian language, they seem scarce to regard each other as of the same species. Thus the terms, "strange persons, people one does not know, the creature, wretches, beasts, brutes," and many other appellations, evidently demonstrate; which Mrs Slipshod having often heard her mistress use, thought she had also a right to use, in her turn: and, perhaps she was not mistaken; for these two parties, especially those bordering nearly on each other, to wit, the lowest of the high, and the highest of the low, often change their parties according to place and time; for those who are people of fashion in one place, are often people of no fashion in another. And with regard to time, it may not be unpleasant to survey the picture of dependance like a kind of ladder: as for instance; early in the morning arises the postilion, or some other boy, which great families, no more than great ships, are with-

out, and falls to brushing the clothes, and cleaning the shoes of John the footman, who being dressed himself, applies his hand to the same labours for Mr Second-hand, the squire's gentleman; the gentleman, in the like manner, a little later in the day, attends the squire; the squire is no sooner equipped, than he attends the levee of my lord; which is no sooner over, than my lord himself is seen at the levee of the favourite; who, after the hour of homage is at an end, appears himself to pay homage to the levee of his sovereign. Nor is there perhaps, in this whole ladder of dependance, any one step at a greater distance from the other, than the first from the second: so that to a philosopher the question might only seem, whether you would chuse to be a great man at six in the morning, or at two in the afternoon. And yet there are scarce two of these, who do not think the least familiarity with persons below them a condescension, and, if they were to go one step farther, a degradation.

And now, reader, I hope thou wilt pardon this long digression, which seemed to me necessary to vindicate the great character of Mrs Slipflop, from what low people, who have never seen high people, might think an absurdity; but we who know them, must have daily found very high persons know us

in one place and not in another, to-day, and not to-morrow; all which it is difficult to account for, otherwise than I have here endeavoured; and perhaps if the gods, according to the opinion of some, made men only to laugh at them, there is no part of our behaviour which answers the end of our creation better than this.

But to return to our history: Adams, who knew no more of this than the cat which sat on the table, imagining Mrs Slipflop's memory had been much worse than it really was, followed her into the next room crying out, 'Madam Slipflop, here is one of your old acquaintance: do but see what a fine woman she is grown since she left Lady Booby's service.' 'I think I reflect something of her,' answered she with great dignity, 'but I can't remember all the inferior servants in our family.' She then proceeded to satisfy Adams's curiosity, by telling him, 'when she arrived at the inn, she found a chaise ready for her; that her lady being expected very shortly in the country, she was obliged to make the utmost haste, and in commensuration of Joseph's lameness, she had taken him with her;' and lastly, 'that the excessive virulence of the storm had driven them into the house where he found them.' After which, she acquainted Adams



with his having left his horse, and expressed some wonder at his having strayed so far out of his way, and at meeting him, as she said, 'in the company of that wench, who she feared was no better than she should be.'

The horse was no sooner put into Adams's head, but he was immediately driven out by this reflection on the character of Fanny. He protested, 'he believed there was not a chaster damsel in the universe. I heartily wish, I heartily wish,' cried he, (snapping his fingers), 'that all her betters were as good.' He then proceeded to inform her of the accident of their meeting; but when he came to mention the circumstance of delivering her from the rape, she said, she thought him properer for the army than the clergy: that it did not become a clergyman to lay violent hands on any one; that he should have rather prayed that she might be strengthened. Adams said, He was very far from being ashamed of what he had done: she replied, Want of shame was not the curycuristie of a clergyman. This dialogue might have probably grown warmer, had not Joseph opportunely entered the room, to ask leave of Madam Slipflop to introduce Fanny: but she positively refused to admit any such trollops; and told him, She would have been burnt, before she would have suf-

ferred him to get into the chaise with her, if she had once respected him of having his fluts waylaid on the road for him; adding, that Mr Adams acted a very pretty part, and she did not doubt but to see him a bishop. He made the best bow he could, and cried out, 'I thank you, Madam, for that right reverend appellation, which I shall take all honest means to deserve.' 'Very honest means,' returned she with a sneer, 'to bring good people together.' At these words Adams took two or three strides across the room, when the coachman came to inform Mrs Slipflop, That the storm was over, and the moon shone very bright. She then sent for Joseph, who was sitting without with his Fanny, and would have had him gone with her: but he peremptorily refused to leave Fanny behind; which threw the good woman into a violent rage. She said, She would inform her Lady what doings were carrying on, and did not doubt but she would rid the parish of all such people; and concluded a long speech full of bitterness and very hard words, with some reflections on the clergy, not decent to repeat: at last, finding Joseph unmoveable, she flung herself into the chaise, casting a look at Fanny as she went, not unlike that which Cleopatra gives Octavia in the play. To say the truth, she

was most disagreeably disappointed by the presence of Fanny; she had, from her first seeing Joseph at the inn, conceived hopes of something which might have been accomplished at an alehouse as well as a palace. Indeed, it is probable Mr Adams had rescued more than Fanny from the danger of a rape that evening.

When the chaise had carried off the enraged Slipshod, Adams, Joseph, and Fanny assembled over the fire; where they had a great deal of innocent chat, pretty enough; but as possibly it would not be very entertaining to the reader, we shall hasten to the morning; only observing, that none of them went to bed that night. Adams, when he had smoked three pipes, took a comfortable nap in a great chair, and left the lovers, whose eyes were too well employed to permit any desire of shutting them, to enjoy by themselves, during some hours, an happiness which none of my readers who have never been in love, are capable of the least conception of, though we had as many tongues as Homer desired to describe it with, and which all true lovers will represent to their own minds without the least assistance from us.

Let it suffice then to say, that Fanny, after a thousand entreaties, at last gave up her

whole soul to Joseph, and almost fainting in his arms, with a sigh infinitely softer and sweeter too than an Arabian breeze, she whispered to his lips, which were then close to hers, ' O Joseph, you have won me: I will be yours for ever.' Joseph having thanked her on his knees, and embraced her with an eagerness which she now almost returned, leaped up in a rapture, and awakened the Parson, earnestly begging him, that he would that instant join their hands together. Adams rebuked him for his request, and told him, He would by no means consent to any thing contrary to the forms of the church: that he had no licence, nor indeed would he advise him to obtain one. That the church had prescribed a form, namely, the publication of banns, with which all good Christians ought to comply, and to the omission of which he attributed the many miseries which beset great folks in marriage; concluding, ' As many as are joined together otherwise than GOD's word doth allow, are not joined together by GOD, neither is their matrimony lawful.' Fanny agreed with the Parson, saying to Joseph with a blush, She assured him she would not consent to any such thing, and wondered at his offering it. In which resolution she was comforted, and commended by Adams, and Jo

Joseph was obliged to wait patiently till after the third publication of the banns, which however he obtained the consent of Fanny, in the presence of Adams, to put in at their arrival.

The sun had been now risen some hours, when Joseph, finding his leg surprisngly recovered, proposed to walk forwards; but when they were all ready to set out, an accident a little retarded them. This was no other than the reckoning, which amounted to seven shillings; no great sum, if we consider the immense quantity of ale which Mr Adams poured in. Indeed they had no objection to the reasonableness of the bill, but many to the probability of paying it; for the fellow who had taken poor Fanny's purse, had unluckily forgot to return it. So that the account stood thus:

Mr Adams and company, Dr	-	0	7	0
		<hr/>		
In Mr Adams's pocket,	-	0	0	6 $\frac{1}{2}$
In Mr Joseph's,	-	0	0	0
In Mrs Fanny's,	-	0	0	0
		<hr/>		
Balance,	-	0	6	5 $\frac{1}{2}$

They stood silent some few minutes, staring at each other, when Adams whipt out on his toes, and asked the hostess, If there was no



clergyman in that parish? She answered, There was. 'Is he wealthy?' replied he; to which she likewise answered in the affirmative. Adams then snapping his fingers, returned overjoyed to his companions, crying out, 'Heureka, Heureka;' which not being understood, he told them in plain English, they need give themselves no trouble; for he had a brother in the parish, who would defray the reckoning, and that he would just step to his house and fetch the money, and return to them instantly.

## C H A P. XIV.

*An interview between parson Adams and parson Trulliber.*

PARSON Adams came to the house of Parson Trulliber, whom he found stripped into his waist-coat, with an apron on, and a pail in his hand just come from serving his hogs: for Mr Trulliber was a parson on Sundays, but all the other six might more properly be called a farmer. He occupied a small piece of land of his own, besides which he rented a considerable deal more. His wife milked his cows, managed his dairy, and followed the markets with butter and eggs. The hogs fell chiefly to his care, which he carefully waited on at home, and attended

to fairs; on which occasion he was liable to many jokes, his own size being with much alerendered little inferior to that of the beasts he sold. He was indeed one of the largest men you should see, and could have acted the part of Sir John Falstaff without stuffing. Add to this, that the rotundity of his belly was considerably increased by the shortness of his stature, his shadow ascending very near as far in height when he lay on his back as when he stood on his legs. His voice was loud and hoarse, and his accent extremely broad: to complete the whole, he had a stateliness in his gait, when he walked, not unlike that of a goose, only he stalked slower.

Mr Trulliber being informed that somebody wanted to speak with him, immediately flipt off his apron, and clothed himself in an old night-gown, being the dress in which he always saw his company at home. His wife, who informed him of Mr Adams's arrival, had made a small mistake; for she had told her husband, She believed here was a man come for some of his hogs. This supposition made Mr Trulliber hasten with the utmost expedition to attend his guest. He no sooner saw Adams, than not in the least doubting the cause of his errand to be what his wife had imagined, he told him, he was come in very good time: that he expected a

dealer that very afternoon; and added, they were all pure and fat, and upwards of 20 score a-piece. Adams answered, he believed he did not know him. 'Yes, yes,' cried Trulliber, 'I have seen you often at fair; why we have dealt before now, mun, I warrant you; yes yes,' cries he, 'I remember thy face very well, but won't mention a word mere till you have seen them, tho' I have never sold thee a fitch of such beacon asis now in the stye.' Upon which he laid violent hands on Adams, and dragged him into the hogs-stye, which was indeed but two steps from his parlour-window. They were no sooner arrived there than he cry'd out, 'Do but handle them; step in, friend, art welcome to handle them whether dost buy them or no.' At which words opening the gate, he pushed Adams into the pig-stye, insisting on it, that he should handle them, before he would talk one word with him. Adams, whose natural complaisance was beyond any artificial, was obliged to comply before he was suffered to explain himself; and laying hold on one of their tails, the unruly beast gave such a sudden spring, that he threw poor Adams all along in the mire. Trulliber, instead of assisting him to get up, burst into a laughter, and entering the stye, said to Adams, with

some contempt, ‘ Why, dost not know how  
 ‘ to handle a hog?’ and was going to lay  
 hold of one himself; but Adams, who thought  
 he had carried his complaisance far enough,  
 was no sooner on his legs, than he escaped  
 out of the reach of the animals, and cried  
 out, ‘ *Nihil habeo cum porcis*: I am a clergy-  
 ‘ man, Sir, and am not come to buy hogs.’  
 Trulliber answered, ‘ he was sorry for the  
 ‘ mistake; but that he must blame his wife;’  
 adding, ‘ she was a fool, and always com-  
 ‘ mitted blunders.’ He then desired him to  
 walk in and clean himself; that he would  
 only fasten up the stye and follow him.  
 Adams desired leave to dry his great coat,  
 wig and hat by the fire, which Trulliber  
 granted. Mrs Trulliber would have brought  
 him a basin of water to wash his face; but  
 her husband bid her be quiet, like a fool as  
 she was, or she would commit more blun-  
 ders, and then directed Adams to the pump.  
 While Adams was thus employed, Trulliber,  
 who had conceived no great respect for  
 the appearance of his guest, fastened the  
 parlour door, and now conducted him in-  
 to the kitchen; telling him, he believed a  
 cup of drink would do him no harm, and  
 whispered his wife to draw a little of the  
 worst ale. After a short silence, Adams  
 said, ‘ I fancy, Sir, you already perceive me

' to be a clergyman.' ' Ay, ay,' cries Trulliber grinning; ' I perceive you have some  
 ' cassock; I will not venture to call it a  
 ' whole one.' Adams answered, ' It was  
 ' indeed none of the best; but he had the  
 ' misfortune to tear it about ten years ago  
 ' in passing over a stile.' Mrs Trulliber re-  
 turning with the drink, told her husband,  
 ' she fancied the gentleman was a traveller,  
 ' and that he would be glad to eat a bit.'  
 Trulliber bid her hold her impertinent tongue;  
 and asked her, if parsons used to travel with-  
 out horses? adding, he supposed the gentle-  
 man had none by his having no boots on.  
 ' Yes, Sir, yes,' says Adams, ' I have a horse,  
 ' but I left him behind me.' ' I am glad  
 ' to hear you have one,' says Trulliber;  
 ' for I assure you I don't love to see clergy-  
 ' men on foot; it is not seemly, nor suiting  
 ' the dignity of the cloth.' Here Trulliber  
 made a long oration on the dignity of the  
 cloth (or rather gown) not much worth re-  
 lating, till his wife had spread the table and  
 set a mess of porridge on it for his breakfast.  
 He then said to Adams, ' I don't know,  
 ' friend, how you came to caale on me;  
 ' however, as you are here, if you think pro-  
 ' per to eat a morsel you may.' Adams ac-  
 cepted the invitation, and the two parsons  
 sat down together, Mrs Trulliber waiting.



behind her husband's chair, as was, it seems, her custom. Trulliber ate heartily, but scarce put any thing in his mouth without finding fault with his wife's cookery. All which the poor woman bore patiently. Indeed she was so absolute an admirer of her husband's greatness and importance, of which she had frequent hints from his own mouth, that she almost carried her adoration to an opinion of his infallibility. To say the truth, the parson had exercised her more ways than one; and the pious woman had so well edified by her husband's sermons, that she had resolved to receive the bad things of this world together with the good. She had indeed been at first a little contentious; but he had long since got the better, partly by her love for this, partly by her fear for that, partly by her religion, partly by the respect he paid himself, and partly by that which he received from the parish; she had, in short, absolutely submitted, and now worshipped her husband as Sarah did Abraham, calling him (not lord, but) master. Whilst they were at table, her husband gave her a fresh example of his greatness; for as she had just delivered a cup of ale to Adams, he snatched it out of his hand, and crying out, 'I caal'd 'vurist,' swallowed down the ale. Adams denied it; it was referred to the wife, who;

though her conscience was on the side of Adams, durst not give it against her husband. Upon which he said, ‘ No, Sir, no, I should not have been so rude as to have taken it from you, if you had caal’d vurst; but I’d have you know I’m a better man than to suffer the best he in the kingdom to drink before me in my own house, when I caale vurst.’

As soon as their breakfast was ended, Adams began in the following manner: ‘ I think, Sir, it is high time to inform you of the business of my embassy. I am a traveller, and am passing this way in company with two young people, a lad and a damsel, my parishioners, towards my own cure; we stopt at a house of hospitality in the parish, where they directed me to you, as having the cure. — Though I am but a curate,’ says Trulliber, ‘ I believe I am as warm as the vicar himself, or perhaps the rector of the next parish too; I believe I could buy them both.’ ‘ Sir,’ cries Adams, ‘ I rejoice thereat. Now, Sir, my business is, that we are by various accidents stript of our money, and are not able to pay our reckoning, being seven shillings. I therefore request you to assist me with the loan of those seven shillings, and also seven shillings more, which peradventure I

‘ shall return to you ; but if not, I am convinced you will joyfully embrace such an opportunity of laying up a treasure in a better place than any this world affords.’

Suppose a stranger who entered the chambers of a lawyer, being imagined a client, when the lawyer was preparing his palm for the fee, should pull out a writ against him. Suppose an apothecary, at the door of a chariot containing some great doctor of eminent skill, should, instead of directions to a patient, present him with a potion for himself. Suppose a minister should, instead of a good round sum, treat my Lord —, or Sir —, or Esq; — with a good broomstick. Suppose a civil companion, or a led captain should, instead of virtue, and honour, and beauty, and parts, and admiration, thunder vice, and infamy, and ugliness, and folly, and contempt in his patron’s ears. Suppose, when a tradesman first carries in his bill, the man of fashion should pay it; or suppose, if he did so, the tradesman should abate what he had overcharged on the supposition of waiting. In short,—suppose what you will, you never can, nor will suppose any thing equal to the astonishment which seized on Trulliber, as soon as Adams had ended his speech. A while he rolled his eyes in silence, sometimes surveying Adams, then his wife, then casting them on

the ground, then lifting them up to heaven. At last he burst forth in the following accents; ' Sir, I believe I know where to lay up my little treasure as well as another; I thank God, if I am not so warm as some, I am content; that is a blessing greater than riches; and he to whom that is given need ask no more. To be content with a little is greater than to possess the world, which man may possess without being so. Lay up my treasure! what matters where a man's treasure is, whose heart is in the scriptures? there is the treasure of a Christian.' At these words the water ran from Adams's eyes; and catching Trulliber by the hand in a rapture, ' Brother,' says he, ' Heaven bless the accident by which I came to see you; I would have walked many a mile to have communed with you; and believe me, I will shortly pay you a second visit: but my friends, I fancy, by this time, wonder at my stay; so let me have the money immediately.' Trulliber then put on a stern look, and cried out, ' Thou dost not intend to rob me?' At which the wife bursting into tears, fell on her knees, and roared out, ' O dear Sir, for Heaven's sake don't rob my master, we are but poor people.' ' Get up for a fool as thou art, and go about thy business,' said Trulliber, ' dost think

‘ the man will venture his life? he is a beg-  
 ‘ gar, and no robber.’ ‘ Very true indeed,’  
 answered Adams. ‘ I wish, with all my heart,  
 ‘ the tithing man was here,’ cries Trulliber,  
 ‘ I would have thee punished as a vagabond  
 ‘ for thy impudence. Fourteen shillings in-  
 ‘ deed? I wont give thee a farthing. I be-  
 ‘ lieve thou art no more a clergyman than  
 ‘ the woman there, (pointing to his wife;)  
 ‘ but if thou art, dost deserve to have thy  
 ‘ gown stript over thy shoulders, for running  
 ‘ about the country in such a manner.’ ‘ I  
 ‘ forgive your suspicions,’ says Adams; ‘ but  
 ‘ suppose I am not a clergyman, I am never-  
 ‘ theless thy brother; and thou as a Christi-  
 ‘ an, much more as a clergyman, art obliged  
 ‘ to relieve my distress.’ ‘ Dost preach to me?’  
 replied Trulliber, ‘ dost pretend to instruct  
 ‘ me in my duty?’ ‘ Ifacks, a good story,’  
 cries Mrs Trulliber, ‘ to preach to my ma-  
 ‘ ster.’ ‘ Silence, woman,’ cries Trulliber,  
 ‘ I would have thee know, friend,’ (addres-  
 ‘ sing himself to Adams,) ‘ I shall not learn my  
 ‘ duty from such as thee; I know what cha-  
 ‘ rity is, better than to give it to vagabonds.  
 ‘ Besides, if we were inclined, the poor’s rate  
 ‘ obliges us to give so much charity,’ cries  
 the wife. ‘ Pugh! thou art a fool. Poor’s  
 ‘ rate! hold thy nonsense,’ answered Trulli-  
 ber: and then, turning to Adams, he told



him, ' he would give him nothing.' ' I am  
 ' sorry,' answered Adams, ' that you do  
 ' know what charity is, since you practise it  
 ' no better; I must tell you if you trust to  
 ' your knowledge for your justification, you  
 ' will find yourself deceived, tho' you should  
 ' add faith to it without good works.' ' Fellow,'  
 cries Trulliber, ' dost thou speak against faith  
 ' in my house? Get out of my doors, I will no  
 ' longer remain under the same roof with a  
 ' wretch who speaks wantonly of faith and  
 ' the Scriptures.' ' Name not the Scrip-  
 ' tures,' says Adams. ' How, not name the  
 ' Scriptures! Do you disbelieve the Scrip-  
 ' tures?' cries Trulliber. ' No, but you  
 ' do,' answered Adams, ' if I may reason  
 ' from your practice: for their commands  
 ' are so explicit, and their rewards and pu-  
 ' nishments so immense, that it is impossible  
 ' a man should stedfastly believe without o-  
 ' beying. Now, there is no command more  
 ' express, no duty more frequently enjoined  
 ' than charity. Whoever therefore is void  
 ' of charity, I make no scruple of pronoun-  
 ' cing that he is no Christian.' ' I would  
 ' not advise thee,' says Trulliber, ' to say  
 ' that I am no Christian; I won't take it  
 ' of you; for I believe I am as good a man  
 ' as thyself:' (and indeed, though he was  
 now rather too corpulent for athletic exer-

cises, he had in his youth been one of the best boxers and cudgel-players in the country.) His wife, seeing him clench his fist, interposed, and begged him not to fight, but shew himself a true Christian, and take the law of him. As nothing could provoke Adams to strike, but an absolute assault on himself or his friend, he smiled at the angry look and gestures of Trulliber; and telling him, he was sorry to see such men in orders, departed without further ceremony.

## C H A P. XV.

*An adventure, the consequence of a new instance which Parson Adams gave of his forgetfulness.*

WHEN he came back to the inn, he found Joseph and Fanny sitting together. They were so far from thinking his absence long, as he had feared they would, that they never once missed or thought of him. Indeed I have been often assured by both, that they spent these hours in a most delightful conversation; but as I never could prevail on either to relate it, so I cannot communicate it to the reader.

Adams acquainted the lovers with the ill success of his enterprize. They were all greatly confounded, none being able to propose

any method of departing: till Joseph at last advised calling in the hostess, and desiring her to trust them; which Fanny said she despaired of her doing, as she was one of the fourest-faced women she had ever beheld.

But she was agreeably disappointed; for the hostess was no sooner asked the question than she readily agreed; and, with a curtsy and smile, wished them a good journey. However, lest Fanny's skill in physiognomy should be called in question, we will venture to assign one reason, which might probably incline her to this confidence and good humour. When Adams said he was going to visit his brother, he had unwittingly imposed on Joseph and Fanny; who both believed he had meant his natural brother, and not his brother in divinity; and had so informed the hostess on her enquiry after him. Now Mr Trulliber had, by his professions of piety, by his gravity, austerity, reserve, and opinion of his great wealth, so great an authority in his parish, that they all lived in the utmost fear and apprehension of him. It was therefore no wonder that the hostess, who knew it was in his option whether she should ever sell another mug of drink, did not dare to affront his supposed brother by denying him credit.

They were now just on their departure,

when Adams recollected he had left his great coat and hat at Mr Trulliber's. As he was not desirous of renewing his visit, the hostess herself, having no servant at home, offered to fetch it.

This was an unfortunate expedient; for the hostess was soon undeceived in the opinion she had entertained of Adams, whom Trulliber abused in the grossest terms, especially when he heard he had had the assurance to pretend to be his near relation.

At her return, therefore, she entirely changed her note. She said, Folks might be ashamed of travelling about, and pretending to be what they were not: that taxes were high, and for her part, she was obliged to pay for what she had; she could not therefore possibly, nor would she trust any body, no not her own father: that money was never scarcer, and she wanted to make up a sum. That she expected therefore they should pay their reckoning before they left the house.

Adams was now greatly perplexed: but as he knew that he could easily have borrowed such a sum in his own parish, and as he knew he would have lent it himself to any mortal in distress, so he took fresh-courage, and sallied out all round the parish, but to no purpose; he returned as penniless as he

went, groaning and lamenting, that it was possible, in a country professing Christianity, for a wretch to starve in the midst of his fellow creatures who abounded.

Whilst he was gone, the hostess, who stayed as a sort of guard with Joseph and Fanny, entertained them with the goodness of Parson Trulliber. And indeed he had not only a very good character, as to other qualities, in the neighbourhood, but was reputed a man of great charity: for though he never gave a farthing, he had always that word in his mouth.

Adams was no sooner returned the second time, than the storm grew exceeding high, the hostess declaring among other things, that if they offered to stir without paying her, she would soon overtake them with a warrant.

Plato and Aristotle, or somebody else hath said, THAT WHEN THE MOST EXQUISITE CUNNING FAILS, CHANCE OFTEN HITS THE MARK, AND THAT BY MEANS THE LEAST EXPECTED. Virgil expresses this very boldly:

*Turne, quod optanti divum promittere nemo  
Auderet volvenda dies, en! attulit ultro.*

I would quote more great men if I could: but my memory not permitting me, I will



proceed to exemplify these observations by the following instance.

There chanced (for Adams had not cunning enough to contrive it) to be at that time in the alehouse, a fellow, who had been formerly a drummer in an Irish regiment, and now travelled the country as a pedlar. This man having attentively listened to the discourse of the hostess, at last took Adams aside, and asked him what the sum was for which they were detained. As soon as he was informed, he sighed, and said, He was sorry it was so much: for that he had no more than six shillings and sixpence in his pocket, which he would lend them with all his heart. Adams gave a caper, and cried out, It would do: for that he had sixpence himself. And thus these poor people, who could not engage the compassion of riches and piety, were at length delivered out of their distress by the charity of a poor pedlar.

I shall refer it to my reader to make what observations he pleases on this incident; it is sufficient for me to inform him, that after Adams and his companions had returned him a thousand thanks, and told him where he might call to be repaid, they all sallied out of the house without any compliments from their hostess, or indeed without paying her any; Adams declaring, he would take parti-

cular care never to call there again, and she, on her side, assuring them she wanted no such guests.

C H A P. XVI.

*A very curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart than of his experience in the ways of this world.*

OUR travellers had walked about two miles from that inn, which they had more reason to have mistaken for a castle, than Don Quixote ever had any of those in which he sojourned, seeing they had met with such difficulty in escaping out of its walls; when they came to a parish, and beheld a sign of invitation hanging out. A gentleman sat smoking a pipe at the door; of whom Adams enquired the road, and received so courteous and obliging an answer, accompanied with so smiling a countenance, that the good Parson, whose heart was naturally disposed to love and affection, began to ask several other questions; particularly the name of the parish, and who was the owner of a large house whose front they had then in prospect. The gentleman answered as obligingly as before; and as to the house, acquainted him it was his own. He then proceeded in

the following manner: ‘ Sir, I presume by  
 ‘ your habit you are a clergyman: and as  
 ‘ you are travelling on foot, I suppose a glass  
 ‘ of good beer will not be disagreeable to  
 ‘ you; and I can recommend my landlord’s  
 ‘ within, as some of the best in all this coun-  
 ‘ try. What say you, will you halt a little  
 ‘ and let us take a pipe together? there is  
 ‘ no better tobacco in the kingdom.’ This  
 proposal was not displeasing to Adams, who  
 had allayed his thirst that day with no bet-  
 ter liquor than what Mrs Trulliber’s cellar  
 had produced; and which was indeed little  
 superior either in richness or flavour to that  
 which distilled from those grains her gene-  
 rous husband bestowed on his hogs. Having  
 therefore abundantly thanked the gentleman  
 for his kind invitation, and bid Joseph and  
 Fanny follow him, he entered the ale-house,  
 where a large loaf and cheese, and a pitcher  
 of beer, which truly answered the character  
 given of it, being set before them, the three  
 travellers fell to eating with appetites infi-  
 nitely more voracious than are to be found  
 at the most exquisite eating-houses in the pa-  
 rish of St James’s.

The gentleman expressed great delight in  
 the hearty and chearful behaviour of Adams;  
 and particularly in the familiarity with which  
 he conversed with Joseph and Fanny, whom

he often called his children, a term he explained to mean no more than his parishioners; saying, he looked on all those whom God had entrusted to his cure, to stand to him in that relation. The gentleman, shaking him by the hand, highly applauded those sentiments. ‘ They are indeed,’ says he, ‘ the true principles of a Christian divine; and I heartily wish they were universal: but on the contrary, I am sorry to say, the parson of our parish, instead of esteeming his poor parishioners as a part of his family, seems rather to consider them as not of the same species with himself. He seldom speaks to any, unless some few of the richest of us; nay, indeed, he will not move his hat to the others. I often laugh, when I behold him on Sundays strutting along the church-yard like a turkey-cock, through rows of his parishioners; who bow to him with as much submission, and are as unregarded as a set of servile courtiers by the proudest prince in Christendom. But if such temporal pride is ridiculous, surely the spiritual is odious and detestable: if such a puffed up empty human bladder strutting in princely robes, just moves one’s derision; surely in the habit of a priest it must raise our scorn.’ ‘ Doubtless,’ answered Adams, ‘ your

‘ opinion is right ; but I hope such examples  
 ‘ are rare. The clergy whom I have the  
 ‘ honour to know, maintain a different be-  
 ‘ haviour; and you will allow me, Sir, that  
 ‘ the readiness which too many of the laity  
 ‘ show to condemn the order, may be one  
 ‘ reason of their avoiding too much humili-  
 ‘ lity.’ ‘ Very true indeed,’ says the gen-  
 ‘ tleman; ‘ I find, Sir, you are a man of ex-  
 ‘ cellent sense, and am happy in this oppor-  
 ‘ tunity of knowing you: perhaps our acci-  
 ‘ dental meeting may not be disadvantageous  
 ‘ to you neither. At present, I shall only  
 ‘ say to you, that the incumbent of this  
 ‘ living is old and infirm; and that it is in  
 ‘ my gift. Doctor, give me your hand; and  
 ‘ assure yourself of it at his decease.’ Adams  
 told him, ‘ he was never more confounded  
 ‘ in his life, than at his utter incapacity to  
 ‘ make any return to such noble and un-  
 ‘ merited generosity.’ ‘ A mere trifle, Sir,’  
 cries the gentleman, ‘ scarce worth your ac-  
 ‘ ceptance; a little more than three hundred  
 ‘ a-year. I wish it was double the value for  
 ‘ your sake.’ Adams bowed, and cried from  
 the emotions of his gratitude; when the  
 other asked him, if he was married, or had  
 any children besides those in the spiritual  
 sense he had mentioned. ‘ Sir,’ replied the  
 parson, ‘ I have a wife and six at your ser-



‘ vice.’ ‘ That is unlucky,’ says the gentleman; ‘ for I would otherwise have taken you into my own house as my chaplain; however, I have another in the parish, (for the parsonage-house is not good enough) which I will furnish for you. Pray, does your wife understand a dairy?’ ‘ I can’t profess she does,’ says Adams. ‘ I am sorry for it,’ quoth the gentleman; ‘ I would have given you half a dozen cows, and very good grounds to have maintained them.’ ‘ Sir,’ said Adams, in an ecstasy, ‘ you are too liberal; indeed you are.’ ‘ Not at all,’ cries the gentleman, ‘ I esteem riches only as they give me an opportunity of doing good; and I never saw one whom I had a greater inclination to serve.’ At which words he shook him heartily by the hand, and told him he had sufficient room in his house to entertain him and his friends. Adams begged he might give him no such trouble; that they could be very well accommodated in the house where they were; forgetting they had not a fixpenny piece among them. The gentleman would not be denied; and informing himself how far they were travelling, he said it was too long a journey to take on foot, and begged that they would favour him, by suffering him to lend them a servant and horses; adding withal,

that if they would do him the pleasure of their company only two days, he would furnish them with his coach and six. Adams, turning to Joseph, said, ‘ How lucky is this gentleman’s goodness to you, who I am afraid would be scarce able to hold out on your lame leg!’ And then addressing the person who made him these liberal promises, after much bowing he cried out, ‘ Blessed be the hour which first introduced me to a man of your charity! you are indeed a Christian of the true primitive kind, and an honour to the country wherein you live. I would willingly have taken a pilgrimage to the holy land to have beheld you: for the advantages which we draw from your goodness, give me little pleasure, in comparison of what I enjoy for your own sake; when I consider the treasures you are by these means laying up for yourself in a country that passeth not away. We will therefore, most generous Sir, accept your goodness, as well the entertainment you have so kindly offered us at your house this evening, as the accommodation of your horses to-morrow morning.’ He then began to search for his hat, as did Joseph for his; and both they and Fanny were in order of departure, when the gentleman stopping short, and seeming to meditate by himself

for the space of about a minute, exclaimed thus: 'Sure never any thing was so unlucky; I had forgot that my house-keeper was gone abroad, and hath locked up all my rooms: indeed I would break them open for you, but shall not be able to furnish you with a bed; for she has likewise put away all my linen. I am glad it entered into my head, before I had given you the trouble of walking there; besides, I believe you will find better accommodations here than you expected. Landlord, you can provide good beds for these people, can't you?' 'Yes, and please your worship,' cries the host, 'and such as no lord or justice of the peace in the kingdom need be ashamed to ly in.' 'I am heartily sorry,' says the gentleman, 'for this disappointment. I am resolved I will never suffer her to carry away the keys again.' 'Pray, Sir, let it not make you uneasy,' cries Adams, 'we shall do very well here; and the loan of your horses is a favour we shall be incapable of making any return to.' 'Ay,' said the squire, 'the horses shall attend you here, at what hour in the morning you please.' And now, after many civilities too tedious to enumerate, many squeezes by the hand, with most affectionate looks and smiles at each other, and after appointing the horses

at seven the next morning, the gentleman took his leave of them, and departed to his own house. Adams and his companions returned to the table, where the Parson smoked another pipe, and then they all retired to rest.

Mr Adams rose very early, and called Joseph out of his bed, between whom a very fierce dispute ensued, whether Fanny should ride behind Joseph, or behind the gentleman's servant; Joseph insisting on it, that he was perfectly recovered, and was as capable of taking care of Fanny as any other person could be. But Adams would not agree to it, and declared he would not trust her behind him; for that he was weaker than he imagined himself to be.

This dispute continued a long time, and had begun to be very hot, when a servant arrived from their good friend to acquaint them, that he was unfortunately prevented from lending them any horses; for that his groom had, unknown to him, put his whole stable under a course of physic.

This advice presently struck the two disputants dumb; Adams cried out, ' Was ever any thing so unlucky as this poor gentleman! I protest I am more sorry on his account than my own. You see, Joseph, how this good-natur'd man is treat-

'ed by his servants; one locks up his linen,  
 ' another physics his horses; and I suppose  
 ' by his being at this house last night, the  
 ' butler had locked up his cellar. Bless us!  
 ' how good-nature is used in this world! I  
 ' protest I am more concerned on his account  
 ' than my own.' ' So am not I,' cries Jo-  
 seph; ' not that I am much troubled about  
 ' walking on foot; all my concern is, how  
 ' we shall get out of the house; unless God  
 ' sends another pedlar to redeem us. But  
 ' certainly this gentleman has such an af-  
 ' fection for you, that he would lend you a  
 ' larger sum than we owe here; which is  
 ' not above four or five shillings.' Very true,  
 ' child,' answered Adams; ' I will write a  
 ' letter to him, and will even venture to so-  
 ' licit him for three half-crowns; there will  
 ' be no harm in having two or three shillings  
 ' in our pockets; as we have full forty miles  
 ' to travel, we may possibly have occasion  
 ' for them.'

Fanny being now risen, Joseph paid her a  
 visit, and left Adams to write his letter,  
 which having finished, he dispatched a boy  
 with it to the gentleman, and then seated  
 himself by the door, lighted his pipe, and be-  
 took himself to meditation.

The boy staying longer than seemed to be  
 necessary, Joseph, who with Fanny was now



returned to the parson, expressed some apprehensions, that the gentleman's steward had locked up his purse too. To which Adams answered, it might very possibly be; and he should wonder at no liberties which the devil might put into the head of a wicked servant to take with so worthy a master: but added, that as the sum was so small, so noble a gentleman would be easily able to procure it in the parish, though he had it not in his own pocket. 'Indeed,' says he, 'if it was four or five guineas, or any such large quantity of money, it might be a different matter.'

They were now sat down to breakfast over some toast and ale, when the boy returned, and informed them, that the gentleman was not at home. 'Very well,' cries Adams; 'but why, child, did not you stay till his return? Go back again, my good boy, and wait for his coming home: he cannot be gone far, as his horses are all sick; and besides, he had no intention to go abroad; for he invited us to spend this day and to-morrow at his house: therefore go back, child, and tarry till his return home.' The messenger departed, and was back again with great expedition; bringing an account that the gentleman was gone a long journey, and would not be at home again this month. At

these words Adams seemed greatly confounded, saying, ' This must be a sudden accident, ' as the sickness or death of a relation, or ' some such unforeseen misfortune ;' and then turning to Joseph, cried, ' I wish you ' had reminded me to have borrowed this ' money last night.' Joseph smiling, answered, he was very much deceived, if the gentleman would not have found some excuse to avoid lending it. ' I own,' says he, ' I was never much pleased with his professing so much kindness for you at first sight ; ' for I have heard the gentlemen of our ' cloth in London tell many such stories of ' their masters. But when the boy brought ' the message back of his not being at home, ' I presently knew what would follow ; for ' whenever a man of fashion doth not care ' to fulfill his promises, the custom is to order his servants that he will never be at ' home to the person so promised. In London they call it denying him. I have myself denied Sir Thomas Booby above an ' hundred times ; and when the man hath ' danced attendance for about a month, or ' sometimes longer, he is acquainted in the ' end, that the gentleman is gone out of ' town, and could do nothing in the business.' ' Good Lord!' says Adams, ' what wickedness is there in the Christian world ! I

‘ profess almost equal to what I have read  
 ‘ of the heathens. But surely, Joseph,  
 ‘ your suspicions of this gentleman must be  
 ‘ unjust; for what a silly fellow must he be,  
 ‘ who would do the devil’s work for no  
 ‘ thing? and canst thou tell me any interest  
 ‘ he could possibly propose to himself by de-  
 ‘ ceiving us in his professions?’ ‘ It is not  
 ‘ for me,’ answered Joseph, ‘ to give rea-  
 ‘ sons for what men do, to a gentleman of  
 ‘ your learning.’ ‘ You say right,’ quoth  
 Adams; ‘ knowledge of men is only to be  
 ‘ learnt from books; Plato and Seneca for  
 ‘ that; and those are authors, I am afraid,  
 ‘ child, you never read.’ ‘ Not I, Sir,  
 ‘ truly,’ answered Joseph; ‘ all I know is,  
 ‘ it is a maxim among the gentlemen of our  
 ‘ cloth, that those masters who promise the  
 ‘ most perform the least; and I have often  
 ‘ heard them say, they have found the lar-  
 ‘ gest vails in those families where they were  
 ‘ not promised any. But, Sir, instead of con-  
 ‘ sidering any farther these matters, it would  
 ‘ be our wisest way to contrive some method  
 ‘ of getting out of this house; for the gene-  
 ‘ rous gentleman, instead of doing us any  
 ‘ service, hath left us the whole reckoning  
 ‘ to pay.’ Adams was going to answer,  
 when their host came in, and with a kind of  
 jeering smile, said, ‘ Well, masters! the

300 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ Squire hath not sent his horses for you yet.  
‘ Laud help me ! how easily some folks  
‘ make promises !’ ‘ How !’ says Adams,  
‘ have you ever known him do any thing of  
‘ the kind before ?’ ‘ Ay, marry have I,’  
answered the host ; ‘ it is no business of mine,  
‘ you know, Sir, to say any thing of a gentle-  
‘ man to his face ; but now he is not here,  
‘ I will assure you he hath not his fellow  
‘ within the three next market-towns. I  
‘ own, I could not help laughing, when I  
‘ heard him offer you the living ; for thereby  
‘ hangs a good jest. I thought he would  
‘ have offered you my house next ; for one  
‘ is no more his to dispose of than the other.’  
At these words, Adams blessing himself, declared,  
‘ he had never read of such a monster,  
‘ but what vexes me most,’ says he, ‘ is, that  
‘ he hath decoyed us into running up a long  
‘ debt with you, which we are not able to  
‘ pay ; for we have no money about us : and,  
‘ what is worse, live at such a distance, that  
‘ if you should trust us, I am afraid you  
‘ would lose your money, for want of our  
‘ finding any conveniency of sending it.’  
‘ Trust you, master !’ says the host, ‘ that I  
‘ will with all my heart ; I honour the clergy  
‘ too much to deny trusting one of them for  
‘ such a trifle ; besides, I like your fear of  
‘ never paying me. I have lost many a debt.

‘ in my lifetime, but was promised to be paid  
 ‘ them all in a very short time. I will score  
 ‘ this reckoning for the novelty of it. It is  
 ‘ the first, I do assure you, of its kind. But  
 ‘ what say you, master, shall we have t’other  
 ‘ pot before we part? it will waste but a  
 ‘ little chalk more; and if you never pay  
 ‘ me a shilling, the loss will not ruin me.’  
 Adams liked the invitation very well; espe-  
 cially as it was delivered with so hearty an  
 accent.—He shook his host by the hand, and  
 thanking him, said, ‘ he would tarry another  
 ‘ pot, rather for the pleasure of such worthy  
 ‘ company, than for the liquor:’ adding,  
 ‘ he was glad to find some Christians left in  
 ‘ the kingdom; for that he almost began to  
 ‘ suspect that he was sojourning in a country  
 ‘ inhabited only by Jews and Turks.’

The kind host produced the liquor, and  
 Joseph with Fanny retired into the garden;  
 where, while they solaced themselves with  
 amorous discourse, Adams sat down with his  
 host; and both filling their glasses, and  
 lighting their pipes, they began that dia-  
 logue which the reader will find in the next  
 chapter.



## C H A P. XVII.

*A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and his host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers.*

‘S I R,’ said the host, ‘I assure you, you  
 ‘are not the first to whom our squire  
 ‘hath promised more than he hath perform-  
 ‘ed. He is so famous for this practice, that  
 ‘his word will not be taken for much by  
 ‘those who know him. I remember a young  
 ‘fellow whom he promised his parents to  
 ‘make an exciseman. The poor people,  
 ‘who could ill afford it, bred their son to  
 ‘writing and accounts, and other learning  
 ‘to qualify him for the place; and the boy  
 ‘held up his head above his condition with  
 ‘these hopes; nor would he go to plough,  
 ‘nor to any other kind of work; and went  
 ‘constantly dressed as fine as could be, with  
 ‘two clean Holland shirts a-week, and this  
 ‘for several years; till at last he followed  
 ‘the squire up to London, thinking there to  
 ‘mind him of his promises; but he could  
 ‘never get sight of him. So that being  
 ‘out of money and business, he fell into evil  
 ‘company and wicked courses; and in the

‘ end came to a sentence of transportation,  
 ‘ the news of which broke the mother’s  
 ‘ heart. I will tell you another true story  
 ‘ of him : There was a neighbour of mine a  
 ‘ farmer, who had two sons whom he bred  
 ‘ up to the business. Pretty lads they were :  
 ‘ nothing would serve the squire, but that  
 ‘ the youngest must be made a parson. Upon  
 ‘ which he persuaded the father to send him  
 ‘ to school, promising that he would after-  
 ‘ wards maintain him at the university, and  
 ‘ when he was of a proper age give him a  
 ‘ living. But after the lad had been seven  
 ‘ years at school, and his father brought him  
 ‘ to the squire with a letter from his master,  
 ‘ that he was fit for the university ; the squire,  
 ‘ instead of minding his promise, or sending  
 ‘ him thither at his expence, only told his  
 ‘ father, that the young man was a fine scho-  
 ‘ lar, and it was pity he could not afford to  
 ‘ keep him at Oxford for four or five years  
 ‘ more, by which time, if he could get him  
 ‘ a curacy, he might have him ordained.  
 ‘ The farmer said, he was not a man suffi-  
 ‘ cient to do any such thing. Why then,  
 ‘ answered the squire, I am very sorry you  
 ‘ have given him so much learning ; for if  
 ‘ he cannot get his living by that, it will ra-  
 ‘ ther spoil him for any thing else ; and your  
 ‘ other son, who can hardly write his name,

## 304 THE ADVENTURES OF

‘ will do more at ploughing and sowing, and  
‘ is in a better condition than he. And in-  
‘ deed so it proved; for the poor lad not  
‘ finding friends to maintain him in his  
‘ learning as he had expected, and being  
‘ unwilling to work, fell to drinking, tho’  
‘ he was a very sober lad before; and in  
‘ a short time, partly with grief, and partly  
‘ with good liquor, fell into a consumption,  
‘ and died. Nay, I can tell you more still:  
‘ there was another, a young woman, and  
‘ the handsomest in all this neighbourhood,  
‘ whom he enticed up to London, promising  
‘ to make her a gentlewoman to one of your  
‘ women of quality: but instead of keeping  
‘ his word, we have since heard, after having  
‘ a child by her himself, she became a com-  
‘ mon whore; then kept a coffee-house in  
‘ Covent-garden; and a little after died of  
‘ the French distemper in a goal. I could  
‘ tell you many more stories: but how do  
‘ you imagine he served me myself? You  
‘ must know, S’r, I was bred a sea-faring  
‘ man, and have been many voyages; ’till at  
‘ last I came to be master of a ship myself,  
‘ and was in a fair way of making a fortune;  
‘ when I was attacked by one of those cursed  
‘ Guardacostas, who took our ships before  
‘ the beginning of the war; and after a fight,  
‘ wherein I lost the greatest part of my crew,

‘ my rigging being all demolished, and two  
 ‘ shots received between wind and water, I  
 ‘ was forced to strike. The villains carried  
 ‘ off my ship, a brigantine of an hundred and  
 ‘ fifty tons, a pretty creature she was, and  
 ‘ put me, a man and a boy, into a little bad  
 ‘ pink, in which, with much ado, we at last  
 ‘ made Falmouth; though I believe the  
 ‘ Spaniards did not imagine she could pos-  
 ‘ sibly live a day at sea. Upon my return  
 ‘ hither, where my wife, who was of this  
 ‘ country, then lived, the squire told me,  
 ‘ he was so pleased with the defence I had  
 ‘ made against the enemy, that he did not  
 ‘ fear getting me promoted to a lieutenantcy  
 ‘ of a man of war, if I would accept of it;  
 ‘ which I thankfully assured him I would.  
 ‘ Well, Sir, two or three years past, during  
 ‘ which I had many repeated promises, not  
 ‘ only from the squire, but (as he told me)  
 ‘ from the lords of the admiralty. He never  
 ‘ returned from London, but I was assured  
 ‘ I might be satisfied now, for I was certain  
 ‘ of the first vacancy; and what surprizes  
 ‘ me still, when I reflect on it, these assur-  
 ‘ ances were given me with no less confidence,  
 ‘ after so many disappointments, than at first.  
 ‘ At last, Sir, growing weary, and some-  
 ‘ what suspicious after so much delay, I  
 ‘ wrote to a friend in London, who I knew

## 306 THE ADVENTURES OF

' had some acquaintance at the best house  
 ' in the admiralty, and desired him to back  
 ' the squire's interest: for indeed, I feared he  
 ' had solicited the affair with more coldness  
 ' than he pretended.---And what answer do  
 ' you think my friend sent me?-----Truly,  
 ' Sir, he acquainted me, that the squire had  
 ' never mentioned my name at the admiralty  
 ' in his life; and unless I had much faithfuller  
 ' interest, advised me to give over my preten-  
 ' sions, which I immediately did; and, with the  
 ' concurrence of my wife, resolved to set up an  
 ' alehouse, where you are heartily welcome:  
 ' and so my service to you; ' and may the  
 ' squire, and all such sneaking rascals, go to  
 ' the devil together.' ' Oh fie!' says Adams,  
 ' oh fie! He is indeed a wicked man; but God  
 ' will, I hope, turn his heart to repentance.  
 ' Nay, if he could but once see the meanness  
 ' of this detestable vice; would he but once  
 ' reflect that he is one of the most scanda-  
 ' lous as well as pernicious liars; sure he must  
 ' despise himself to so intolerable a degree,  
 ' that it would be impossible for him to  
 ' continue a moment in such a course. And,  
 ' to confess the truth, notwithstanding the  
 ' baseness of this character, which he hath  
 ' too well deserved, he hath in his counte-  
 ' nance sufficient symptoms of that *bona in-*  
 ' *deles*, that sweetness of disposition which



‘ furnishes out a good Christian.’ ‘ Ah !  
 ‘ master, master,’ says the host, ‘ if you had  
 ‘ travelled as far as I have, and conversed  
 ‘ with the many nations where I have traded,  
 ‘ you would not give any credit to a man’s  
 ‘ countenance. Symptoms in his counte-  
 ‘ nance, quotha ! I would look there, per-  
 ‘ haps, to see whether a man has had the  
 ‘ small-pox, but for nothing else.’ He spoke  
 this with so little regard to the parson’s ob-  
 servation, that it a good deal nettled him ;  
 and, taking the pipe hastily from his mouth,  
 he thus answered : ‘ Master of mine, perhaps I  
 ‘ have travelled a great deal farther than you,  
 ‘ without the assistance of a ship. Do you  
 ‘ imagine sailing by different cities or coun-  
 ‘ tries is travelling? No.

‘ *Cælum non animum mutant qui trans mare  
 currant.*

‘ I can go farther in an afternoon than you  
 ‘ in a twelvemonth. What, I suppose you  
 ‘ have seen the pillars of Hercules, and per-  
 ‘ haps the walls of Carthage. Nay, you may  
 ‘ have heard Scylla, and seen Charybdis ;  
 ‘ you may have entered the closet where Ar-  
 ‘ chimedes was found at the taking Syracuse.  
 ‘ I suppose you have sailed among the Cyclo-  
 ‘ des, and passed the famous straits which  
 ‘ take their name from the unfortunate Helle,

' whose fate is sweetly described by Apollo-  
 ' nius Rhodius. You have passed the very  
 ' spot, I conceive, where Dædalus fell into  
 ' that sea, his waxen wings being melted by  
 ' the sun; you have traversed the Euxine  
 ' sea, I make no doubt; nay, you may have  
 ' been on the banks of the Caspian, and cal-  
 ' led at Colchis, to see if there is ever another  
 ' golden fleece.'—' Not I, truly, master,' an-  
 ' swered the host, ' I never touched at any of  
 ' these places.' ' But I have been at all these,'  
 ' replied Adams. ' Then I suppose,' cries the  
 ' host, ' you have been at the East Indies; for  
 ' there are no such, I will be sworn, either in  
 ' the West or the Levant.' ' Pray where's  
 ' the Levant?' quoth Adams, ' that should  
 ' be in the East Indies by right.'—' Oho!  
 ' you are a pretty traveller,' cries the host,  
 ' and not know the Levant. My service to  
 ' you, master; you must not talk of these  
 ' things with me! you must not tip us the  
 ' traveller; it won't go here.' ' Since thou  
 ' art so dull to misunderstand me still,' quoth  
 ' Adams, ' I will inform thee; the travelling  
 ' I mean is in books, the only way of travel-  
 ' ling by which any knowledge is to be ac-  
 ' quired. From them I learn what I assert-  
 ' ed just now, that Nature generally imprints  
 ' such a portraiture of the mind in the coun-  
 ' tenance, that a skilful physiognomist will

‘ rarely be deceived. I presume you have  
 ‘ never read the story of Socrates to this  
 ‘ purpose, and therefore I will tell it you.  
 ‘ A certain physiognomist asserted of So-  
 ‘ rates, that he plainly discovered by his  
 ‘ features that he was a rogue in his na-  
 ‘ ture. A character so contrary to the te-  
 ‘ nour of all this great man’s actions, and the  
 ‘ generally received opinion concerning him,  
 ‘ incensed the boys of Athens so, that they  
 ‘ threw stones at the physiognomist, and  
 ‘ would have demolished him for his igno-  
 ‘ rance, had not Socrates himself prevented  
 ‘ them, by confessing the truth of his obser-  
 ‘ vations, and acknowledging, that though  
 ‘ he corrected his disposition by philosophy,  
 ‘ he was indeed naturally as inclined to vice  
 ‘ as had been predicated of him. Now, pray  
 ‘ resolve me,—How should a man know this  
 ‘ story if he had not read it?’ ‘ Well, ma-  
 ‘ ster,’ said the host, ‘ and what signifies it  
 ‘ whether a man knows it or no? He who  
 ‘ goes abroad as I have done, will always  
 ‘ have opportunities enough of knowing the  
 ‘ world, without troubling his head with So-  
 ‘ crates, or any such fellows.’——‘ Friend,’  
 ‘ cries Adams, ‘ if a man should sail round  
 ‘ the world, and anchor in every harbour of  
 ‘ it, without learning, he would return home

' as ignorant as he went out.' ' Lord help  
 ' you,' answered the host, ' there was my  
 ' boatswain, poor fellow! he could scarce  
 ' either write or read, and yet he would na-  
 ' vigate a ship with any master of a man of  
 ' war; and a very pretty knowledge of trade  
 ' he had too.' ' Trade,' answered Adams,  
 ' as Aristotle proves in his first chapter of  
 ' politics, is below a philosopher, and unna-  
 ' tural as it is managed now.' The host  
 look'd stedfastly at Adams, and after a mi-  
 nute's silence asked him, If he was one of the  
 writers of the Gazetteers? ' for I have  
 ' heard,' says he, ' they are writ by parsons.'  
 ' Gazetteers!' answered Adams, ' what is  
 ' that?' ' It is a dirty news-paper,' replied  
 the host, ' which hath been given away all  
 ' over the nation for these many years, to  
 ' abuse trade and honest men, which I would  
 ' not suffer to ly on my table, though it hath  
 ' been offered me for nothing.' ' Nor I truly,'  
 said Adams, ' I never write any thing but ser-  
 ' mons; and I assure you I am no enemy to  
 ' trade, whilst it is consistent with honesty;  
 ' nay, I have always looked on the tradesman  
 ' as a very valuable member of society, and  
 ' perhaps inferior to none but the man of  
 ' learning.' ' No, I believe he is not, nor  
 ' to him neither,' answered the host. ' Of

‘ what use would learning be in a country  
 ‘ without trade ! What would all you par-  
 ‘ sons do to clothe your backs and feed your  
 ‘ bellies ? Who fetches you your silks, and  
 ‘ your linens, and your wines, and all the  
 ‘ other necessaries of life ? I speak chiefly  
 ‘ with regard to the sailors.’ ‘ You should say,  
 ‘ the extravagancies of life,’ replied the par-  
 son ; ‘ but admit they were necessaries, there  
 ‘ is something more necessary than life itself,  
 ‘ which is provided by learning ; I mean the  
 ‘ learning of the clergy. Who clothes you  
 ‘ with piety, meekness, humility, charity, and  
 ‘ all the other Christian virtues ? Who feeds  
 ‘ your souls with the milk of brotherly love,  
 ‘ and diets them with all the dainty food of  
 ‘ holiness, which at once cleanses them of all  
 ‘ impure carnal affections, and fattens them  
 ‘ with the truly rich Spirit of grace ! — Who  
 ‘ doth this ?’ ‘ Ay, who indeed !’ cries the  
 host ; ‘ for I do not remember ever to have  
 ‘ seen any such clothing, or such feeding.  
 ‘ And so in the mean time, master, my service  
 ‘ to you.’ Adams was going to answer with  
 some severity, when Joseph and Fanny re-  
 turned, and pressed his departure so eagerly,  
 that he would not refuse them ; and so  
 grasping his crabs tick, he took leave of his  
 host, (neither of them being so well pleased



312 THE ADVENTURES, &c.

with each other as they had been at their first sitting down together), and with Joseph and Fanny, who had both expressed much impatience, departed, and now all together renewed their journey.

*End of VOLUME FIRST.*

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30



1935  
3351

12/ - 9/ - 24.





